MORTEN DAM JØRGENSEN

EXOTIC
LONG-LIVED
PARTICLES

THIS THESIS HAS BEEN SUBMITTED TO THE PHD SCHOOL
OF THE FACULTY OF SCIENCE, UNIVERSITY OF COPENHAGEN
Abstract

A search for hadronising long-lived massive particles at the Large Hadron Collider is conducted with the ATLAS detector. No excess events are found. Based on statistical analysis, upper limits on the production cross section are observed to be between 0.01 pb and 0.006 pb for colour octet particles (gluinos) with masses ranging from 300 GeV/c^2 to 1400 GeV/c^2, and 0.01 pb to 0.004 pb for colour triplet particles (stops and sbottoms) with masses ranging from 200 GeV/c^2 to 900 GeV/c^2. In the context of Supersymmetry with decoupled sfermion and sboson sectors (Split-SUSY), this gives a lower limit on the gluino mass of 989 GeV/c^2, and 683 GeV/c^2 for the stop mass and 618 GeV/c^2 for the sbottom mass.

In addition, a new method is presented that improves the speed (β) estimation for long-lived particles in the ATLAS tile calorimeter with a factor of 7 improvement in resolution at low-β and a factor of 2 at high-β. An additional advantage of the new method is that the β-response is flat within the range of acceptance (0.2 < β ≤ 0.9) with an average β-resolution of 2.2%. The resolution of the speed estimate using the ATLAS pixel tracker has been improved by a factor of 3 at low β to a factor of 2 at higher β. The new method also introduces a flat response compared with previous methods.

Furthermore, a simulation of magnetically charged monopoles is conducted. Based on simulation, magnetic monopoles with Dirac charges g_D > 10 will predominantly be trapped in the LHC beam-pipe if produced within ATLAS. Two regions are identified as optimal for the extraction of the beam-pipe in a magnetometer-based search.

Finally, a contribution has been made to the proposed IceCube low-energy extension called PINGU which will improve the neutrino sensitivity to E_ν ~ 1 GeV. Motivated by indirect searches for Dark Matter annihilation in the sun, a likelihood based reconstruction method is developed that allows neutrino interaction vertex, energy, and direction estimation at this energy. The method provides a fast estimate based on a newly developed parametric model and multi-dimensional nested sampling. In addition, two neutrino flavour detection algorithms are developed which allow separation of charge-current muon events from other neutrino events.
**Resumé**

Eksistensen af massive partikler med lang levetid og farveladning er blevet afssøgt ved hjælp af the Large Hadron Collider og ATLAS detektoren ved CERN. Der er ikke fundet evidens for sådanne partikler. En statistisk analyse af resultatet har ledt til en øvre grænse for produktionstværsnittet af farve-oktet partikler (gluinoer) på mellem 0.01 pb og 0.006 pb for partikel masser i intervallet 300 GeV/$c^2$ – 1400 GeV/$c^2$. For farve-triplet partikler (stop og sbottom) med masser i intervallet 200 – 900 GeV/$c^2$ er produktionstværsnittet mindre end 0.01 – 0.004 pb, disse grænser antager et konfidensinterval på 95%. Under hypotesen, at der er tale om Supersymmetriske partikler, hvor sfermion og sboson sektorerne er uforbundede (Split-SUSY), kan disse produktionsgrænser tolkes som grænser for minimum massen for hhv. gluinoer, stops og sbottoms. Gluinoer med masse mindre end 989 GeV/$c^2$, stops med masse mindre end 683 GeV/$c^2$ og sbottoms med masse mindre end 618 GeV/$c^2$ er udelukkede.

Hertil er en ny metode udviklet, der forbedrer hastighedsestimeringen ($\beta$) i forbindelse med partikler med lang levetid. Metoden forbedrer hastighedsopløsningen i Tile-kalorimeteret i ATLAS med en faktor 7 for lave $\beta$-værdier og en faktor 2 for høje $\beta$-værdier. Den nye metode giver et fladt response med konsistente $\beta$-estimater i intervallet (0.2 < $\beta$ ≤ 0.9) med en middel $\beta$-opløsning på 2.2%. $\beta$-opløsningen i forbindelse med ATLAS’ Pixel Tracker er også forbedret med en faktor 2 – 3 i forhold til tidligere metoder. Her er $\beta$-response også fladt i samme interval som for Tile-kalorimeteret.

Derudover er en simulation foretaget af magnetisk ladede monopoler. Simulationen viser at monopoler med en Dirac-ladning $g_D > 10$ typisk vil stoppe i LHCs vakuum rør før de når instrumenteringen i ATLAS. To regioner er blevet identificeret som optimale for en magnetometerbaseret analyse.

Bidrag til den nyeligt foreslåede IceCube opgradering kaldet PINGU er præsenteret. Vha. PINGU kan man undersøge eksistensen af Mørkt stof ved indirekte at observere neutrino flusks fra solen. Bidragene er i form af en ny teknik til rekonstruktion af neutrino energi, retnings og interaktionspunkt i PINGU detektoren. Teknikken bygger på en parametrizering af signalpropagationen i IceCube. To teknikker udviklet til genkendelse af neutrino typer er også præsenteret.
Preface

Everything we see around us is made of particles. As we don’t see many things popping in and out of existence it may sound unintuitive that most particles studied by physicists today, are so fleetingly short-lived that they barely exist, before fragmenting into less-massive particles. The particles that remain, for at least awhile once produced, we call long-lived. Before we get to such specifics, an explanation may be in order, for what are particles, and how do we relate a solid object such as a tree or a rock to them?

At its surface a rock is cold or warm, rough or shiny, most are heavy compared to other things but the weight varies as well. The physics of stones, plants and people are basically the same, but to understand that we must make a series of jumps in scales. Take you hand for example. It is made of cells, which again contains many things needed to sustain and replicate them. These things such as DNA, are again made of molecules, which are more or less complex arrangements of atoms. Molecules can exist because it is possible for atoms to share one of more electrons, the first fundamental particle we’ll meet on our journey. Electrons have certain properties such as electric charge a specific mass and other properties discovered during the twentieth century such as particle spin.

Electrons are also long-lived (or more likely completely stable). Electrons while not entirely massless, are but tumbleweed compared to the atomic nucleus. The nucleus of atoms contains densely packed protons and neutrons each nearly 2000 times heavier than an electron. Like the Sun fixing our planetary system so does the nucleus create a point around which we are likely to find electrons. The exact location of the electrons are not well-defined, contrary to the precise astronomical predictions we have on the planetary bodies in our solar system. A special kind of behaviour described by Quantum Mechanics governs the movement and properties of electrons and also nuclei. Here at the scales $10^{10}$ times smaller than what we usually think of, the laws of nature are not deterministic. At the atomic scales, physics is probabilistic in nature; if there is a chance that an electron can be somewhere, however improbable, it still can happen. Modern technology such as computers and light emitting diodes are based on this quantum mechanical principle. The reason electrons keep within the vicinity of the nucleus, is that they all have electric charge. The electrons are negatively charged while the protons in the nucleus are positively charged. The mutual attraction of these particles binds the atom together. “Squishy splashy matter” (at room temperature) such as water are bound together not by explicit sharing electrons but rather by some of the charge in one atom to be attracted to some of the charge in another forming a loose bond (Figure 1).

Figure 1: A water molecule consisting of two hydrogen atoms and a oxygen atom is bound by the Van der Waals force or ‘residual electric force’. The reason why the atoms stick together is that their geometry produces a dipole (like a magnet) even if the individual atoms are neutral. A similar residual force binds protons and neutrons in the nucleus of atoms.

1 Called covalent bonds
2 Ionic bonds is another type of charge-sharing where to ions (atoms missing or having additional electrons making them non-neutral) are electrically attracted to each other.
Why this is relevant to particle physics and not just biochemists, is because of its resemblance to what happens inside the nucleus. Having a bunch of protons packed together is like trying to stick the positive poles of two magnets together, they don’t really want to do it a whole lot. As opposite attract, identical repulse. Something much stronger than the electric force must keep the protons bound together. What keeps the nucleus bound is called the Nuclear Force, which is a residual force from something called the Strong Force that binds the constituents of the protons together. Neutrons are made of the same constitutes as protons but in a mixture that cancels its electric charge, it therefore helps containing the positive protons by “adding” more of the nuclear force relative to the electric force. The constituents of the nuclei are called quarks. Like electrons quarks are also believed to be fundamental particles without further structure inside. Quarks have both electric charge which comes in fractions of the electron’s charge and also another type of charged called colour. Like the pixels on your phone screen the name colour is inspired by the fact that not one type of charge but three, are needed to explain the behaviour of quarks. Quarks have never been seen to roam around alone, they are always bound together to form colour neutral objects such as protons and neutrons, we call this sad lack of independence on their behalf for confinement which is a defining feature of the physics of quarks called Quantum Chromodynamics. While quarks don’t get out much, they have excellent recreative opportunities within their confines. Unlike gravity and the electric forces that becomes stronger at short ranges, the strong force in some sense becomes weaker at short distances. This behaviour called asymptotic freedom, effectively means that quarks are freely interacting particles when observed at short ranges. Short ranges translates into high energies in particle physics, and that let’s us jump to the experimental side of this story.

When tying a bolt or sewing with a needle, the tool and the material must match in scale. When looking at bacteria in a microscope the light reflecting of the organism must also have a shorter wavelength than the details we want to observe. Visible light such as red light is 0.7 micrometers in wavelength allows us to discern feature about half that length. A virus is only around 0.1 micrometer in diameter and visible light is no longer sufficient if we want to study its details. One of the neat things about quantum mechanics is that particles was found to have wave-like properties and waves (light is electromagnetic waves) particle properties. So if the wavelength of the visible light is too long for viruses what is then the wavelength of an electron? It depends on the speed of the particle, but electron microscopes typically have a hundred thousand times more resolving power than optical telescopes. To study the constitutes of atoms, nuclei and perhaps quarks the wavelength of the incoming particle must be shorter than the scale of the object we wish to study. We “tune” this wavelength by accelerating particles to very high speeds increasing their momentum enough to penetrate and resolve details smaller than the size of protons. The length scales of modern collider ‘microscopes’ are around $10^{-18}$ m which is why we haven’t seen any details of the particle world with earlier methods. It is also the reason why we continue to build new larger accelerator facilities around the world, there is no knowing what lies further within, it is a quest for the deepest knowledge, we know how to collect from nature.
At the very other end of the distance scale is the universe we inhabit. Strange as it may sound, the smallest and the largest is intimately linked. That the universe at some point in history was much denser energy wise is by now common knowledge. The ‘Big Bang’ is a likely conclusion when we extrapolate all observations of the cosmos back in time. The extremely high energy densities that must have been our universe at its birth resembles the collision energies studied with particle colliders. Our colliders are hence not just microscopes but also telescopes and time machines, for they tell us the story of the birth and early development of our universe. Cosmos also holds mysteries that astrophysicists hope can be solved by particle physics. A force feeble next to the nuclear and electromagnetic force is gravity. Astrophysicists have known and studied the motion of celestial objects long before the birth of any other science, and gravity was the earliest modelled force of nature. Nevertheless there is something amiss in our universe if we are to believe General Relativity, the current theory of gravity. It seems that gravity is overrepresented compared to the visible mass out there, the missing mass is simply called dark matter. Among other things dark matter must be long-lived, moderately massive but also invisible to light sensitive detectors. If dark matter is matter it may be something particle physicists can find, at least indirectly, at collider experiments.

At the Large Hadron Collider (LHC) at CERN in Geneva we are collecting data from billions of proton collisions. The collision energies are the highest humanity has ever achieved, and it opens up for the discovery of new particles such as dark matter and other particles. One class of such new particles, are the ones that are long-lived. They, like protons and electrons, have “reasons” not to decay into simpler particles. These reasons are normally ascribed to a conserved quantity such as electric charge mentioned earlier. Conserved quantities are the product of a deeper idea called symmetry. All actions in nature that returns the object under manipulation to its original state is called symmetry transformations. As we will see in later chapters, this by definition implies that some conserved quantity must exist. As conservation means that it is hard if not impossible to get rid of a specific quantity, some stable particle must carry the quantity for no other reason than that the quantity is “more stable” than the particle. In this thesis it is assumed that some currently undiscovered particles for various reasons are long-lived. It is not of much concern exactly why this is, before a potential discovery. That said, mankind has always wondered about what could be out there, and plenty of such suggestions have been produced. These would-be theories such as Supersymmetry and Extra Dimensions help serve as guiding predictions for experimental searches.

My work the last three years have taken me through the search for long-lived particles in various forms. What these forms have in common is that technical imagination have lead to better ways of looking for such particles. The thesis is, that by imagining what such particles would do to matter it moved through, it is possible to devise methods of observing them. Based on these methods we search and either discover or exclude (under specific circumstances) the existence to new particles.
Outline

The attempt of this thesis is to connect a series of studies I took part in during my time as a PhD student at the Niels Bohr Institute in Copenhagen, Denmark. Some parts are omitted for instance a short study on the Angular distributions of $H \rightarrow ZZ \rightarrow 4\mu$ [70] and are very educational study on how to reconstruct charged particles with high-resolution CMOS pixel sensors. The remaining three subjects I have worked on are: charged long-lived particles, trapped magnetic monopoles and neutrino event reconstruction and identification. These remaining subjects are covered in this thesis in more-or-less the time proportion I have been working with them.

Five parts constitutes this thesis. The first part Searches for long-lived massive particles and theoretical motivations in an introduction to the theoretical and phenomenological nature of long-lived particles in the context of the Standard Model and new theories, in particular Supersymmetry. The part closes with a listing of previous searches for long-lived particles.

The second part Principles of particle detection provides a review of common ways particles can interact with matter, and how these interactions are measured with detectors in ATLAS (and IceCube). The production of colliding particles is discussed in a chapter dedicated to the Large Hadron Collider.

In the third part Searches for long-lived particles with ATLAS at the LHC, my work on long-lived particle searches with ATLAS is presented. The initial chapters in this part of the thesis involves the development and improvement of two types of particle speed estimators that are crucial in searches for long-lived particles in ATLAS. The last chapter is a review of a search we conducted for coloured and charged long-lived particles (R-Hadrons) with LHC data recorded in 2011 [111]. The search evolved from a similar search done in 2010 [105] with my participation.

The next part, Prospects for future searches with ATLAS at the LHC studies how far the continued search for long-lived particles in ATLAS can be expected to be sensitive given a specific model assumption. A simulation study of the acceptance of magnetic monopoles trapped in the LHC beam-pipe after being produced within ATLAS [83] closes the part.

A very different avenue of research is pursued in Low mass dark matter detection with IceCube. The IceCube neutrino detector at the South Pole is already actively searching for Dark Matter with high masses. An upgrade called PINGU [122] will enhance the sensitivity to low-mass Dark Matter, a region of contested interest due to intriguing results from other experiments. My work in this part is very practical and focused on how to detect and reconstruct neutrinos that indirectly can point to dark matter annihilation within the Sun.

The author’s contributions and acknowledgements

The work described in this thesis is done by me with the exception of the estimation of systematic uncertainties in Section 9.6. That being said none of the work I have done could be possible without considerable collaboration and contributions from many sources. It will not do my collaborators enough justice to simply claim some area as specifically mine alone, fruit-
ful scientific ventures are collaborations where ideas are formed with equal inspiration and perspiration from others. Nevertheless I hope to claim responsibility over the following areas without overstepping my bounds too much:

- **Long-lived particles in ATLAS**
  - Introduction of a common data-format for long-lived particles searches in ATLAS (now called LLP-D3PD and maintained by Sascha Mehlhase).
  - Design and implementation of Calorimeter dE/dx estimators [63].
  - Improvements to Pixel detector dE/dx speed estimation (Chap. 7).
  - Improvements to Tile Calorimeter Time-of-Flight estimation (Chap. 8).
  - Initial input to monte carlo signal definitions, trigger selection and pre-selection (Sec. 9.3).
  - Design and implementation of Event selection (Sec. 9.4).
  - Implementation of a Data-driven background estimation based on earlier works by others, (in particular Troels Petersen) (Sec. 9.5).
  - Computation of theoretical cross sections and integrated luminosity (Sec. 9.2.2).
  - Statistical hypothesis testing, computation of upper limits (Sec. 9.7).
  - Production of fancy limit plots (Sec. 9.8).

This leaves out important work in the calibration of estimators, production of data files, estimating systematic uncertainties and not least handling the editorial work of our publication. For these tasks I have been happy to work with Troels Petersen, Sascha Mehlhase, Simon Heisterkamp, Martin Spangenberg and our colleagues at Technion in Israel and Genova in Italy.

- **Trapped Magnetic Monopoles**
  - My contributions to this work was mostly in thoughts and ideas during the practical tests done at ETH In Zurich.
  - Some initial data analysis was done by me
  - The study in Section 10.3 is entirely new and only inspired by our publication.

This study was to me an excursion into alternative experimentation and taught me a great deal about how smaller studies are conducted. I am deeply grateful to David Milstead and Philippe Mermod for letting me ‘tag along’ on their venture. During the work for this thesis, Terry Sloan helped with insights into the dynamics of monopole energy loss and I thank him for his very helpful and prompt guidance.

- **IceCube-PINGU Reconstruction**
  - All methods described in this thesis (Chap. 11) are designed, developed and implemented by me, the Event Shape method was proposed by Troels Petersen.
My PINGU work was done in the last year of my study. The backstory is that I wanted to try something else than ATLAS physics after having contributed to two analyses. The seemingly infinite patience of my supervisor Troels Petersen allowed me this opportunity, when he suggested that I could join PINGU which Denmark at that time was hoping to join. As the new ‘Dane’ in IceCube, D. Jason Koskinen became my de facto co-supervisor who helped me with access and explanations of the workings of IceCube before he arrived for his position at the Institute in August of 2013. None of the projects I have undertaken in PINGU have seen fruition yet (neither has the experiment) but hopefully the work I have initiated will be continued by others. Joakim Sandroos, a current research assistant at our group, has taken over on one of the particle identification methods (Event Shapes Sec. 13.2) and I hope it will show its usefulness in time.

• MIMOSA CMOS Pixel detector reconstruction

In the interim period between ATLAS and IceCube I found work in studying track reconstruction in beam telescopes. As a research project it proved ultimately unsuccessful, but the lessons learned, inspired the work on simulation and reconstruction at PINGU. The study was based on detectors purchased by our group here at the Niels Bohr Institute from the University of Strasbourg. The sensors were given to Ulrik Uggerhøj’s group at the University of Aarhus, where they constructed a beam telescope, a custom magnet and performed tests with the setup at SPS CERN. Ulrik and his PhD students Tobias Nyholm Wistisen, Kristoffer Andersen and Rune Mikkelsen all helped by providing insight into the setup and workings of their telescope and not least access to their raw data.

My first and foremost acknowledgement is to Troels Petersen who as my supervisor have given me opportunity to develop my own research interests and provided valuable feedback, inspiration and no small amount of patience.

Work in high-energy physics is done in collaborations based on the infrastructure designed by collaborations, supported by nations of nations – in short, a full acknowledgement is beyond the scope of this small section. Nevertheless I will like to thank my collaborators in ATLAS, IceCube and the LHC accelerator team for their structural support and for providing an exciting possibility for studying phenomena scarcely imaginable by people living just a generation or two back. I would also like to thank the Lundbeck foundation for supporting my study through their Fellowship grant, awarded to my supervisor Troels Petersen.

For editing and proofreading this thesis I would like to thank Almut Pingel, Jørn Dines Hansen and Troels.

Having been part of the local ATLAS (and recently IceCube) group at the Niels Bohr Institute for nearly seven years has meant a lot to me. It is hard to underestimate the formative experience of being in such an environment for that long. I cannot mention all the present and recent members of the group during my time here, but aside from the ones already mentioned: Jørgen Beck Hansen, Mogens Dam, Stefania Xella and Peter Hansen have all been great mentors and colleagues for an aspiring physicist.
This thesis as a PDF file, illustrations, source code and personal datasets are available at:

http://llp.gluino.com
Contents

Abstract 5
Resumé 7

I Searches for long-lived massive particles and theoretical motivations

1 On the longevity of particles 23

2 The Standard Model 27
   The particle content of the Standard Model 27
   Electroweak theory 27
   Quantum Chromodynamics 29
   Long-lived particles in the Standard Model 30
   Neutrinos 32

3 Proposed models with massive long-lived particles 39
   A need for a new theory 39
   Supersymmetry 40
   Split-Supersymmetry 46
   Other models with LLPs 46
   Dark matter 48
   Previous searches 50
   Conclusion 51

II Principles of particle detection

4 Particle detection and identification 55
   Electromagnetic interactions 55
   Hadronic interactions 62
   Particle identification 63
   Summary 67
Searches for long-lived massive particles and theoretical motivations
1 On the longevity of particles

The theme of this thesis is Long-Lived massive Particles (LLPs). Commonly, they are also termed ‘metastable’, ‘detector-stable’ or simply ‘stable’ particles. The confusion is remedied by a common definition, they are particles that are stable at the scale of observation, i.e. they decay outside the particle detector instrumentation. This criteria means that we can measure their properties directly instead of studying effects of secondary particles from their decay, as is normally the case in collider experiments.

Whether or not a particle decays within a certain length, is determined by a combination of the particle’s lifetime at rest and the speed with which it travels relative to the detector. The lifetime of a particle at rest is \( \tau = \frac{\bar{h}}{\Gamma} \), where \( \Gamma \) is the total width of the particle (see sec 2.4.1). For a particle in motion this translates into a traversed distance

\[
c\tau \sim \frac{c\beta\gamma\bar{h}}{\Gamma}.
\]

The general purpose detectors at the LHC are \( O(10 \text{ m}) \) in radii, which corresponds to a total width \( \Gamma_{\text{stable}} \sim 10^{-17} \text{ GeV} \) for non-relativistic particles.

General purpose particle detectors such as ATLAS and CMS are designed to measure and identify SM long-lived particles. These are the indirect signatures recorded to reconstruct properties of rapidly decaying massive particles such as Higgs bosons or top quarks. To clearly distinguish the long-lived particles in the SM from the ones presented in this thesis, we note that no SM particles with a rest mass larger than 2 GeV \( /c^2 \) is considered long-lived at the LHC, whereas the particles we are hunting weigh in excess of 200 GeV \( /c^2 \), and we could call them ‘long-lived massive particles’. Because accelerator technology has advanced from low to higher energies, new kinds of long-lived particles are typically massive in the sense that their masses are larger than any particle type previously observed directly. The last constraint on ‘long-lived particles’ is that they must be electrically observable, carrying either electric or magnetic charge at least at some point in their lifetime traversing the detector. Neutral long-lived particles such as neutrinos can be inferred indirectly from recoil and are naturally just as long-lived but the experimental signature requires an entirely different analysis.

Definition: long-lived massive particles are in this context:
- Stable throughout the detector.
- Massive compared to known long-lived particles.
- Electrically or magnetically charged.

\[1 \text{ Here } c \text{ is the speed of light, } \bar{h} \text{ is the reduced planck constant, } \beta \text{ the particle speed in fractions of } c \text{ and } \gamma = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\beta^2}} \text{ the Lorentz boost factor.} \]
Searches for LLPs are motivated by both theories and prior empirical evidence. All matter around us is made of long-lived particles, and when humanity began a deeper search we found new types of long-lived particles such as muons, pions and positrons. From a theoretical point of view long-lived particles are often introduced by necessity into theories through conserved quantities, that are otherwise required to make the theory resilient against obvious faux pas, such as letting protons decay instantly (as in Supersymmetry’s R-parity conservation). Even if the theory has an elaborate structure of decays and interactions, the conserved quantity must be either annihilated by its anti-quantity or carried by a long-lived particle.

Chapter 3 will motivate the theoretical reasons for this kind of search and list some of the experimental searches for long-lived particles. The relevance of LLPs in nature as well as in unverified theory makes this type of search an unending endeavour. While relic abundances in the universe, previous searches and excluded models all point towards exclusion of additional LLPs in nature, they are impossible to rule out, due to the extreme nature of these particles.

This work is limited in scope to strongly interacting, electrically charged, detector-stable massive particles while the methodology is kept general enough to cover any search for electrically (multi-)charged particles produced by some mechanism and decaying beyond the calorimeter in most general purpose experiments. This dual scope is sometimes reflected in ambivalent constraints, that is displayed in the analytical workflow (Sec. 9) where a more model specific assumption might have improved a limit but was kept loose to allow wider interpretation of the result.

This leads to the last premise for this kind of experimental work, quantification of the overall sensitivity to a new class of unobserved particles. From the point of view of the experimentalist (me) a search for any new phenomena is a balance between the direct falsification of a specific hypothesis posed by a theory and the minimisation of theoretical bias tainting the possibility of detecting the unexpected. Searches for long-lived particles are entirely detector driven, no model of associated production is really needed as long as we can guarantee the purity of the objects we want to observe. As massive LLPs have no natural background a null experiment can be set up without knowing anything more about the object, than the detection efficiency and mis-identification probability, both numbers that can be estimated from simple studies of already known objects.

Even with the possibility of a ‘zero-signal-model’ search for anything beyond the Standard Model, we tend to rest our searches on some basic phenomenological model. This lets us guide the search in regions where nothing similar to the signal hypothesis exists. The signal studied in this thesis exhibit the same signatures as low-mass protons or kaons but at much higher mass. This reoccurrence allows for the signal optimisation without a signal model. In practice some estimators such as Time-of-Flight (ToF) are impossible to use with less massive particles as the detector systems involved are destructive to the very same particles we want a time measurement from.

The theoretical model applied to the LLPs in this work, is based on the hypothetical framework called Supersymmetry – lending particle names such as ‘gluinos’, ‘stops’ and ‘sbottoms’ to what is simply colour octets and
triplets. The actual simulation of what these objects will do in our detector, is only considering the colour charges and not the underlying hypothesis. This is an important point to remember as the generality of this work is easily lost in supersymmetry definitions. A further point is that searches such as this are inclusive when it comes to mass, charge, spin and so on. Our search is ‘colour-blind’ and only cares for the particles electrical properties. That means that even though hadrons are not charge-stable in the same sense as electrons or other elementary charged particles, they still represent a conservative estimate for these objects, the only difference is a lower detection efficiency. As for multi-charged particles (MCPs), some of the estimators saturates at high levels of ionisation easily induced by MCPs which limits the sensitivity somewhat (in practice to $|q| \sim 3$ in ATLAS) but otherwise the only difference is the linear underestimation of momentum due to $p \sim 0.3 B q R$. If the momentum is measured to be more than 100 GeV we still observe the new particle but at a systematically reduced mass estimate, a discovery nevertheless.

In summary, this work can be considered a ‘worst case’ scenario on the search for long-lived charged particles, it can be reinterpreted as colour-neutral and/or multi-charged particles as well as coloured particles. At the LHC sufficient resources are available for specific searches but this work and similar ones can serve as unfolding manuals to the willing.

\[ p \sim 0.3 B q R \]

2 See Section 4.3.1

$p$: momentum
$B$: magnetic field strength
$q$: particle charge
$R$: bending radius of the particle track in the magnetic field.
The Standard Model

The subject of this thesis is *physics beyond the Standard Model*. Some of it is not even motivated by theoretical predictions, it nevertheless requires knowledge of the current theory to exceed it. That is why this short review of the Standard Model (SM) of particle physics will precede the actual subject matter. I will start by introducing the theory, its constituent particles and some of the interesting complexities. That is followed by a quick listing of shortcomings presented by our ever ambitious, promethean field of physics.

### 2.1 The particle content of the Standard Model

In the Standard Model both forces and matter are represented as particles. The forces are mediated between matter particles by integer spin bosons. The constituent particles themselves are fermions (all spin-1/2) and are either *quarks* or *leptons*. Each of these classes comes in three generations with a particle-doublet in each. The generations are progressively more massive (Table 2.1). The leptons are the electron ($e^-$), the muon ($\mu^-$), the tau ($\tau^-$) as well as three corresponding neutral neutrinos ($\nu_e$, $\nu_\mu$, $\nu_\tau$). The quarks also form three generations with electric charges $(2/3e, -1/3e)$ for each generation. Quarks are confined in hadronic bound states forming either baryons ($qqq$) or mesons ($q\bar{q}$), fermions and bosons respectively. All particles in the Standard Model have distinct anti-particle counterparts with opposite electric charge. The neutrinos could be either Dirac or Majorana nature. If they are found to be Majorana particles, they are their own anti-particles. For the electromagnetic force, that couples to charged particles, the photon ($\gamma$) is the force mediator. For the weak force three force mediators exist, the neutral $Z^0$, the charged $W^+$ and $W^-$, all particles in the Standard Model couples to the weak force. The strong force is mediated by eight gluons ($g$) that couple to quarks (and themselves). The charge they couple to is called colour and comes in three compared to the single charge type of electromagnetism (Table 2.2). Only quarks carry colour charge. The last fundamental particle in the Standard Model is the Higgs boson. It is not a force-carrier per se, but a consequence of the Higgs-mechanism that gives mass to the $W$ and $Z$ bosons.

### 2.2 Electroweak theory

The Electroweak Theory (EWT) forms the unification of two theories. Quantum electrodynamics (QED) describes the interactions of electrically charged particles and photons, while the Weak force theory describes the flavour
Table 2.1: Fermions in the Standard Model. Grey lines represent generations. All charged particles have opposite sign anti-particles, Ref. [125].

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Flavour</th>
<th>Mass [MeV/c^2]</th>
<th>Charge [e]</th>
<th>Colour</th>
<th>Spin [\hbar]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Quarks</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Up</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>+2/3</td>
<td>R,G,B</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Down</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>−1/3</td>
<td>R,G,B</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charm</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>1275</td>
<td>+2/3</td>
<td>R,G,B</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strange</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>−1/3</td>
<td>R,G,B</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Top</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>173070</td>
<td>+2/3</td>
<td>R,G,B</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bottom</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>4180</td>
<td>−1/3</td>
<td>R,G,B</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Leptons</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Electron</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>0.511</td>
<td>−1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Electron-neutrino</td>
<td>\nu_e</td>
<td>&lt; 2 eV/c^2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muon</td>
<td>\mu</td>
<td>105.66</td>
<td>−1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muon-neutrino</td>
<td>\nu_\mu</td>
<td>&lt; 0.19 MeV/c^2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tauon</td>
<td>\tau</td>
<td>1776.82</td>
<td>−1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tau-neutrino</td>
<td>\nu_\tau</td>
<td>&lt; 18.2 MeV/c^2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1/2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

changing nature of weak interactions. The two theories unify at energies \(O(100 \text{ GeV})\) into the electroweak theory. The theory is defined by a \(SU(2) \times U(1)\) gauge symmetry.

All interactions between electrically charged particles in QED can be represented with in terms of photon exchange (Figure 2.1a). Contrary to QED, EWT allow both neutral particle and charged particle interaction. This is allowed by the neutral \(Z^0\) and the charge carrying \(W^\pm\) mediators. In Neutral Current (NC) interactions (Figure 2.1b) a quark or lepton of any type emits a \(Z^0\) that can decay into a charged particle pair or neutrals\(^1\). Charge Current (CC) interactions (Fig 2.1c) are mediated by the charged \(W^\pm\), which allow the \(W\) to decay to a single charged particle and a neutral particle\(^2\), conserving remaining quantum numbers such as Lepton numbers in the classic \(\beta\)-decay: \(d \rightarrow u + W^- \rightarrow u + \nu_e + e^-\).

\(^1\) The large mass of the \(Z^0\) allow the particle to decay to a variety of particle states (70\% hadrons, 20\% neutrinos and 10\% charged leptons) [125].

\(^2\) The \(W^\pm\) decay into hadrons 70\% of the time and \(l^\pm \nu\) 30\% of the times [125].

The lepton sector allows for weak interactions within each generation (allowing \(\mu^- \rightarrow \nu_\mu + e^- \nu_e\) but not \(\mu^- \rightarrow e^-\)). In the quark sector, only colour (and the electric charge carried by the \(W^\pm\)) is conserved and flavour can change, meaning the type of quark. The flavour change is modelled by assuming that the weak force couples to pairs,

\[
\begin{bmatrix}
  u \\
  d' \\
  c \\
  s' \\
  t \\
  b'
\end{bmatrix}
\]

where \(d', s'\) and \(b'\) are linear combinations of \(d, s\) and \(b\) quarks, where their
mixing coefficients are captured by the CKM matrix:

\[
\begin{pmatrix}
d' \\
s' \\
b'
\end{pmatrix} =
\begin{pmatrix}
V_{ud} & V_{us} & V_{ub} \\
V_{cd} & V_{cs} & V_{cb} \\
V_{td} & V_{ts} & V_{tb}
\end{pmatrix}
\begin{pmatrix}
d \\
s \\
b
\end{pmatrix}.
\] (2.2)

### 2.2.1 Electroweak unification

In the electroweak theory, electromagnetism and the weak interactions are symmetrical at a unification scale around 246 GeV. When at lower energies the symmetry is (spontaneously) broken, we see the ‘difference’ between the two theories expressed by the force-mediating ‘gauge’ bosons in the weak sector gaining mass. The spontaneous symmetry breaking is introduced by the Higgs-mechanism that causes the $W^\pm$ and $Z^0$ to gain 80 and 91 GeV of mass relative to their massless electromagnetic sibling, the $\gamma$. Why does this describe the differences in range and rate of weak decays relative to electromagnetic interactions? A way the fundamental forces are expressed by particles is through the uncertainty principle. By reversing Heisenberg’s equation [132], it allows us to ‘borrow’ an amount of energy $\Delta E$ as long as its energy is returned in time $\Delta t$, satisfying

\[\Delta E \Delta t \approx \frac{\hbar}{2}.\] (2.3)

This particle borrowed from the vacuum is called ‘virtual’ and can be ‘off-shell’, violating energy conservation for a brief time. Rewriting (2.3) we can express the maximum range a massive particle can possibly travel,

\[R \approx \frac{\hbar}{2mc}.\] (2.4)

From this we see that a massless particle such as the photon has infinite range\(^3\) while the massive $W^\pm$ and $Z^0$ bosons have a maximum range of $R \sim 10^{-18}$ m. Which relative to the electromagnetic force make it look weak as it suppresses the reaction probability (see the relative ranges in Table 2.2).

### 2.3 Quantum Chromodynamics

Quantum Chromodynamics (QCD) is manifested as the strong force. It binds quarks together into hadrons, that based on the spin content can be either baryons or mesons. Like the residual electromagnetic force (the Van der Waals force) binds molecules together at atomic scales, so does the residual strong force bind protons and neutron together into nuclei. In QCD the conserved charge is colour. While only one type of charge is present in QED three such charges exists in QCD. This gives us an SU(3) symmetry. Photons

---

\(^a\) The Higgs boson is not a force exchanging particle.

\(^b\) The range of the force is calculated as in Sec. 2.2.1.

\(^c\) The graviton is a hypothetical particle, not a part of the Standard Model (or classic General Relativity) but represents gravity in comparison with the other forces.

Table 2.2: Gauge bosons in the Standard Model.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Label</th>
<th>Force</th>
<th>Mass [GeV]</th>
<th>Relative Range</th>
<th>Spin</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gluon (g)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Strong</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>$10^{10}$</td>
<td>10^{-15}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Photon ((\gamma))</td>
<td>Electromagnetic</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>$10^{10}$</td>
<td>$10^{-18}$</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W</td>
<td>((W^\pm))</td>
<td>Weak</td>
<td>80.385</td>
<td>$10^{25}$</td>
<td>$10^{-18}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Z</td>
<td>((Z^0))</td>
<td>Weak</td>
<td>91.188</td>
<td>$10^{25}$</td>
<td>$10^{-18}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graviton*</td>
<td>G</td>
<td>Gravitational</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>$\infty$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Higgs</td>
<td>H</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>125.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
can not carry electric charge itself, that is not the case for the force mediator in QCD; the *gluon* can itself carry colour (and anti-colour). To account for the trinity of charge 8 gluons exists. Because gluons can carry colour, they themselves can form bound states, the *glueballs*. The possible vertices are also a bit more complicated:

Not only does the gluon carry colour pairs, the gluons can bind to themselves, creating a rich combinatorial phenomenology.

Another difference from QED is the way the strong force acts over distance. While the electromagnetic force gets weaker over distance, the strong force just gets stronger. This leads to the concepts of confinement and asymptotic freedom. Quarks are considered free particles at small distance scales, which is called asymptotic freedom. But when quarks are separated from each other, their interaction force is not decreased like in electromagnetism. A new quark pair is created from vacuum to balance the colour field creating new bound states. This leads to confinement as quarks are always found ‘hadronised’ into colour neutral bound states. We will see how this concept is central to the search for long-lived coloured particles in the later chapters.

### 2.4 Long-lived particles in the Standard Model

Before searching for new kinds of massive long-lived particles, it is instructive to realise that the Standard Model already supplies us with plenty of light long-lived particles. At collider timescales any particle that does not decay before leaving the detector volume is considered ‘stable’. That means protons, neutrons, deuterons, electrons, muons and neutrinos. Aside from these particles, many baryon and meson states are relatively long-lived.

#### 2.4.1 Particle decay

A substantial part of particle physics-terminology is inherited from atomic and nuclear physics, for instance the decay rate or ‘width’ $\Gamma$ of a particle is the probability per unit time of a particle to decay. As in nuclear physics, the decay rate is statistical in nature and only valid for an ensemble of particles. In a population of $N$ particles, the decrease in the population due to decay is

$$\frac{dN}{dt} = -\Gamma N.$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.5)

For a population the size at a time $t$ is

$$N(t) = N(0)e^{-\Gamma t}. \hspace{1cm} (2.6)$$

The mean lifetime is the reciprocal decay-rate:

$$\tau_0 = \frac{\hbar}{\Gamma}. \hspace{1cm} (2.7)$$

In the study of long-lived particles this is naturally a critical value (Table 2.3).
Some particles have multiple ways to decay. The $\tau$-lepton can decay in many ways: 17% of the times into a muon $\tau \rightarrow \mu \bar{\nu}_\mu \nu_\mu$ and just as often into an electron, and the rest of the times into various ‘modes’ containing quarks. The total decay rate of tau particles is then

$$\Gamma_{\text{tot}} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Gamma_i. \quad (2.8)$$

And the mean lifetime is

$$\tau_{\text{tot}} = \frac{\hbar}{\Gamma_{\text{tot}}}, \quad (2.9)$$

which in case of taus is $\tau_{\text{tot}} \approx 2.9 \times 10^{-13}$ s [125], when summing roughly 215 different decay modes. The fraction of a specific decay $\Gamma_i$ of the total is called the branching ratio:

$$\text{BR}_i = \frac{\Gamma_i}{\Gamma_{\text{tot}}}. \quad (2.10)$$

When all possible decay modes have been calculated the mean lifetime is then easily determined from (2.9).

Due to relativistic effects, even a tau particle with its 0.3 ps lifetime can be observed to travel some distance at sufficiently high momenta:

$$\tau = \tau_0 \gamma = \frac{\tau_0}{\sqrt{1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}}} = \frac{\tau_0}{\sqrt{1 - (p/\sqrt{p^2 + m^2})^2}} \quad (2.11)$$

$$\bar{d}_{p=100 \ TeV} = c \beta \tau_0 = 8.69 \times 10^{-7} \ m \quad (2.12)$$

$$d_{p=100 \ TeV} = c \beta \tau = 4.89 \ m \quad (2.13)$$

At sufficiently high momenta even taus can be considered long-lived, in fact a 2 PeV $\tau$-particle has a mean travel distance of roughly, a hundred meters in IceCube.

In both ATLAS and IceCube the relativistic lifetime is an important parameter in particle reconstruction and identification. With a wide range of long-lived Standard Model particles available and good momentum reconstruction we are able to emulate the detection signatures of new types of particles as well as develop calibration techniques based on these SM particles.

In Figure 2.2, some of the common long-lived particles in the Standard Model (ignoring the stable ones) are shown. What is not visible on the plot are the particle masses but all of them weigh less than 10 GeV, only the $\pi$, $K$ and $\mu$s are sufficiently long-lived at low momentum to achieve sufficient range to be directly detectable in ATLAS. A further glance at the figure reveals ‘families’ of lifetimes. Ignoring the leptons, we see four groupings of hadrons. These arise from conservation rules preferring certain decay-modes, while increased mass of the hadrons opens the decay phase-space to new heavier secondary particles.
Neutrinos were postulated by W. Pauli in 1930 [78] in order to explain the continuous energy spectrum of electrons observed in $\beta$-decays ($n \rightarrow p + \beta^- + \nu_e$). The interaction cross section of these neutrinos seemed too small for practical observation. Nevertheless in 1956 Cowan et al. succeed in detecting the elusive particle [34]. Neutrinos only interact through the weak force by either CC or NC exchange. The cross section for neutrino interactions is indeed quite small $\sim 10^{-38}$ cm$^2$ $\sim 10$ fb for nucleon interactions [125].

2.5.1 Neutrino Oscillations

By the mid twenties the Sun’s energy was proposed to be produced in nuclear fusion [40]. The actual process was not easily explained. H. Bethe proposed [20] in 1939 that stars with solar masses or smaller could drive a proton-proton fusion chain (Figure 2.3). The pp-chain essentially fuses protons into helium-4 nuclei ($\alpha$ particles) and releases photons and neutrinos in the process. The energy released in photons and kinetic energy of $\alpha$ particles would keep the Sun’s hydrostatic equilibrium counter-balancing the gravitational collapse by heating. Proving stellar nuclear synthesis was attempted by measuring the neutrino flux, the only part of the pp-chain that left the centre of the sun unscathed. As can be seen from the processes in Figure 2.3, five reactions lead to neutrino emission. The energy spectrum (Figure 2.4) and the relative flux from each of these reactions are quite characteristic. While the primary $pp$ reaction has the highest neutrino flux, the Boron-8 reaction contributes the highest energy to the neutrino and was selected as the target.
for experimental verification by the Davis experiment in 1968 [36].

The result from the Davis experiment was an observation of only $\sim 1/3$ of the predicted neutrino flux. The deficit did not raise much alarm in the beginning as both the experiment and the prediction were wildly ambitious. The deficit assumed a complete extraction of 33 argon atoms out of a tank filled with 615 tons of tetrachloroethylene. On the theory side the solar Standard Model was a complex model relying on nuclear, statistical and gravimetric physics. Later experiments confirmed the deficit, and the deficit became known as the solar neutrino problem. In 1968, B. Pontecorvo suggested [80] a strikingly simple explanation: electron neutrinos would transform into muon or tau neutrinos in-flight, which would then go unnoticed in the $\nu_e$-sensitive experiments. In 2001 the Sudbury Neutrino Observatory (SNO) conclusively showed [127, 128] that the missing solar neutrinos are in fact oscillating into muon neutrinos. The mathematical introduction of oscillations into the Standard Model resembles the mixing of quark states due to the CKM matrix introduced in Electroweak theory. The formalism described here is in principle valid for an arbitrary number of neutrino flavours, but the LEP experiments [6] showed that only three light neutrinos are allowed in the Standard Model. Neutrino mixing can be modelled by introducing a unitary mixing matrix named the Pontecorvo–Maki–Nakagawa–Sakata (PMNS) matrix:

$$
\begin{pmatrix}
\nu_e \\
\nu_\mu \\
\nu_\tau
\end{pmatrix} = U
\begin{pmatrix}
\nu_1 \\
\nu_2 \\
\nu_3
\end{pmatrix},
$$

(2.14)
where three are mixing angles and three are complex phases:

\[
U = \begin{pmatrix}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & c_{13} & s_{13}e^{-i\delta_{CP}} \\
0 & -s_{13}e^{i\delta_{CP}} & c_{13}
\end{pmatrix} \times \text{diag}(e^{i\theta_1 / 2}, e^{i\theta_2 / 2}, 0)
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.15)

\[
= \begin{pmatrix}
c_{12}c_{13} & s_{12}c_{13} & s_{13}e^{-i\delta_{CP}} \\
-s_{12}c_{23} - c_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta_{CP}} & c_{12}c_{23} - s_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta_{CP}} & s_{23}c_{13} \\
-s_{12}s_{23} - c_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta_{CP}} & -c_{12}s_{23} - s_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta_{CP}} & c_{23}c_{13}
\end{pmatrix} \times \text{diag}(e^{i\theta_1 / 2}, e^{i\theta_2 / 2}, 0)
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.16)

The notation is shorthand for \( c_{ij} \equiv \cos \theta_{ij}, \) \( s_{ij} \equiv \sin \theta_{ij}, \) where \( \theta_{12}, \theta_{13} \) and \( \theta_{23} \) are the mixing angles. It has not been confirmed whether neutrinos are in fact their own anti-particles or not, that is whether they are Majorana and \( \theta \) or Dirac particles. This is captured by the two phases \( \alpha_1 \) and \( \alpha_2 \) in the fourth matrix. Additionally, \( \delta_{CP} \) is a possible CP-violating phase called the Dirac phase.

With (2.16) each flavour eigenstate can be written as a superposition of the mass eigenstates,

\[
|\nu_\alpha\rangle = \sum_i U_{\alpha i} |\nu_i\rangle.
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.17)

The oscillation effect is observed for propagating neutrinos, where we can describe the actual propagation as a time-dependent solution of Schrödinger’s equation, for each of the mass eigenstates \( |\nu_j\rangle \):

\[
i \frac{d}{dt} |\nu_j(t, \vec{x})\rangle = H |\nu_j\rangle = -\frac{1}{2m_j} \Delta |\nu_j\rangle.
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.18)

The solution is a plane wave equation, that in the relativistic limit \( (E \gg m) \) reads

\[
|\nu_j(L)\rangle = e^{-im_j L / E} |\nu_j(0)\rangle.
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.19)

The solution is given as a function of travel distance \( L \). Substituting the plane wave solution (2.19) into (2.17), we find the flavour eigenstate after the particle has traveled a distance \( L \)

\[
|\nu_\alpha(L)\rangle = \sum_j U_{\alpha j} e^{-im_j L / E} |\nu_j\rangle.
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.20)

The transition probability \( T_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta} \) is then [65]:

\[
P(\nu_\alpha \rightarrow \nu_\beta) = \left| \langle \nu_\beta | \nu_\alpha(L) \rangle \right|^2
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.21)

\[
= \sum_i \left| U^{*}_{\alpha j} e^{-im_j L / E} U_{\beta i} \right|^2
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.22)

\[
= \delta_{\alpha \beta} - 4 \sum_{i > j} \text{Re}(U^{*}_{\alpha i} U_{\beta i} U_{\alpha j} U^{*}_{\beta j}) \sin^2 \left[ \frac{(m_i^2 - m_j^2) L c^3}{4E h} \right]
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.23)

\[
+ 2 \sum_{i > j} \text{Im}(U^{*}_{\alpha i} U_{\beta i} U_{\alpha j} U^{*}_{\beta j}) \sin \left[ \frac{(m_i^2 - m_j^2) L c^3}{2E h} \right]
\]
In (2.21), $E$ is the neutrino energy and as before $L$ is the oscillation distance. The mass splittings $\Delta m^2_{ij} \equiv m_i^2 - m_j^2$ between two mass eigenstates $i$ and $j$, together with the three mixing angles $\theta_{12}$, $\theta_{13}$ and $\theta_{23}$, are the fundamental observables in neutrino oscillations. (2.21) holds for an arbitrary number of neutrino flavours and whether $\alpha \neq \beta$ or not. If $\Delta m^2_{ij}$ is zero that is if the neutrinos are massless or have identical mass, the oscillations disappears – oscillations imply masses.

\subsection*{2.5.2 Matter effects}

Neutrinos that traverse matter can interact with the surrounding particles by the neutral current (NC) exchange of a $Z^0$ boson. This effect occur for all neutrino flavours, and does not change the mass eigenstates nor the phases. Electron neutrinos do however have an additional possibility of charge current (CC) interactions with the surrounding electrons that gives raise to changes in the mass eigenstates, and through (2.21) affects the flavour eigenstates and the parameters in (2.16). The effect is in some ways similar to optical refraction of light in matter and is called the MSW effect after L. Wolfenstein, S. Mikheyev and A. Smirnov [133]. In short, the effect on electron neutrinos can be modelled as an additional potential,

$$V_{CC} = \pm \sqrt{2} G_F N_e,$$

where $G_F$ is Fermi’s constant and $N_e$ is the electron number density in the medium. The sign in (2.24) implies that the effect acts oppositely for antielectron-neutrinos. The potential is added to the model by extending the hamiltonian in (2.18) with an additional factor,

$$A = \pm \frac{2\sqrt{2} G_F N_e E_\nu}{\Delta m^2}.$$  

A consequence of the MSW effect is the possibility of an oscillation resonance if $A = \cos^2 \theta$. The effect occurs only for either neutrinos or antineutrinos depending on the sign of $\Delta m^2$. The density profile of the Earth together with the MSW resonance effect creates a rich survival probability profile for atmospheric neutrinos as we will see in later chapters.

\subsection*{2.5.3 Current status on neutrino parameter measurements}

The neutrino sector is described by the absolute masses of the three neutrinos together with their mixing angles and a possible CP violating phases. Describing neutrino oscillations requires less information as the relative mass differences are sufficient to fully determine the transition probabilities. At the time of writing, the absolute mass values are still unknown, but all the oscillation parameters have been measured to some extent. We know the values of all oscillation parameters except the sign of $\Delta m^2_{32}$ and the octant of the $\theta_{23}$ angle. Both of these indeterminacies are due to the measurement of squared values instead of the bare parameters. The sign of $\Delta m^2_{32}$ is required to determine how the mass hierarchy is defined (Sec. 2.5.4).

$\theta_{12}$ and $\Delta m^2_{21}$ The mixing angle $\theta_{12}$ is known as the solar mixing angle ($\theta_{sol}$) as it is determined by measuring the $\nu_e$ flux from the sun (Figure 2.3).
The oscillations of $\nu_e$ from the Sun are enhanced as they traverse the Sun, due to the MSW effect. Another way to measure $\theta_{12}$ and $\Delta m^2_{21}$ is by $\bar{\nu}_e$ radiation from nuclear reactors. Here KamLAND [123] has measured neutrino fluxes with a 180 km baseline. A combination of results from both reactor and solar neutrino experiments estimates [129]:

$$\tan^2 \theta_{12} = 0.443^{+0.030}_{-0.025}$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.26)
$$\Delta m^2_{21} = 7.46^{+0.20}_{-0.19} \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.27)
$$\text{sgn}(m_2 - m_1) = 1.$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.28)

$\theta_{23}$ and $\Delta m^2_{32}$. The $\theta_{23}$ angle is sometimes referred to as $\theta_{\text{atm}}$ as it was first measured with atmospheric neutrinos by Super-Kamiokande in 1998 [100]. Atmospheric neutrinos are produced when cosmic rays (primarily protons) interact with nuclei in the atmosphere and cause showers of secondary particles. The hadronic collision generates a large number of charged pions that dominantly decays to muons and muon-neutrinos. Atmospheric neutrinos are produced everywhere in the Earth’s atmosphere, with energies in the GeV-range compared to the solar and reactor neutrinos in the MeV range.

Today $\theta_{23}$ and $\Delta m^2_{32}$ are also measured by so-called long-baseline experiments where muon-neutrinos are produced at particle accelerators and intercepted by dense detectors at the first oscillation minima. One such experiment is MINOS. For MINOS a $\nu_\mu$ beam is prepared at Fermilab with a peak energy around 7 GeV. Two detectors one near to the production point ($\sim 100$ m away) and one far, around 735 km away in the Soudan mine measure the disappearance of the $\nu_\mu$ neutrinos. The latest result from MINOS is [124],

$$\sin^2(2\theta_{23}) = 0.950^{+0.035}_{-0.036}$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.29)
$$\Delta m^2_{32} = 2.41^{+0.09}_{-0.10} \times 10^{-3} \text{ eV}^2.$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.30)

$\theta_{13}$. The last mixing angle $\theta_{13}$ has only recently been measured and found to be $> 0$ which opens up for possible CP-violating mixing [125, Chap. 13]. The first significant measurement of $\theta_{13}$ was reported by the Daya Bay collaboration [116] in 2012. The latest result is

$$\sin^2(2\theta_{13}) = 0.092 \pm 0.016 \text{ (stat.)} \pm 0.005 \text{ (syst.)}.$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.31)

Table 2.4 summaries the currently known and unknown neutrino mixing parameters from the Particle Data Group [125].

### 2.5.4 Neutrino mass hierarchy

The two mass splittings $\Delta m^2_{21}$ and $\Delta m^2_{32}$ are fairly well determined, and also the sign of $\Delta m^2_{32}$ has been found to be positive, determining the mass ordering between two of the three mass eigenstates. That leaves one last degeneracy in the mass hierarchy, namely the sign of $\Delta m^2_{32}$ (Figure 2.5). Two possibilities exists:

- **Normal**: $m_1 < m_2 < m_3$
- **Inverted**: $m_3 < m_1 < m_2$
The colourings in Figure 2.5 represents the flavour content in each mass eigenstate.

With the discovery of a relatively large mixing angle for $\theta_{13}$ it is possible to determine the mass hierarchy in multiple ways. One of these is with a low energy upgrade of the IceCube detector (Chapter 11). This upgrade called PINGU (Chapter 11.2) would make it possible to determine the hierarchy at a low cost compare to alternative collider and reactor based efforts.

![Figure 2.5: Neutrino Mass Hierarchy. The undetermined sign of the $\Delta m_{32}$ mass splitting is leaving two orderings open, either a normal hierarchy or an inverted one where the $m_1$ mass eigenstate is the lightest.](image-url)
3 Proposed models with massive long-lived particles

3.1 A need for a new theory

The accepted description of how particles interact and decay are formulated in the Standard Model (SM) of particle physics (see Chapter 2 for an introduction). The Standard Model has so far proved extremely successful in part thanks to its underlying reliance on quantum field theory (QFT) that makes the model extensible and allows the inclusion of new phenomena as they are discovered. That said, certain limitations to the theoretical reach makes it relevant to question the completeness of the theory. The following limitations are in particular striking omissions, and so serves as motivation for new theories that goes Beyond the Standard Model (BSM):

- **Gravity**: The inclusion of gravity into a renormalisable quantum field theory a requirement to include it in the Standard Model, has faced serious problems. Alternative theories such as superstring theory and loop quantum gravity attempt to unify particle physics and gravity.

- **Dark Matter**: Astronomical and cosmological observations seem to show that the Standard Model only accounts for 4% of all matter in the universe (see Sec. 3.5). 26.8% seems to be dark matter interacting gravitationally and weakly [126].

- **Neutrino masses**: The Standard Model is constructed with massless neutrinos. We know that neutrinos oscillate between flavours, which imply that neutrinos have masses, albeit small ones (Sec. 2.5).

- **Baryon asymmetry**: The observable universe is made mostly of baryonic matter. When considering that the most dominant processes in the Standard Model conserves charge and parity (CP) it seems odd that Baryonic antimatter is not more prevalent in the universe. CP-violation do happen in the Standard Model as we saw with the CKM matrix in Section 2.2 but not the any extent that explains why antimatter is so seemingly rare.

**Undiscovered predictions**: The Standard Model also has a few predictions left to be discovered, in particular a type of matter known as glueballs (Sec. 2.3), but that can hardly be held against the theory.

**Theoretical inadequacies**: While the Standard Model works perfectly fine as it is, some find its number of free parameters (28) unsatisfactory and
want a more fundamental theory. A deeper problem lies in the large difference in scales between electroweak symmetry breaking happening around $\mathcal{O}(100 \text{ GeV})$ which defines the scale of the SM in general and the Planck scale at $10^{19} \text{ GeV}$ where space-time is believed to be quantised. The large difference between the two scales is particularly problematic for the Higgs mass. Renormalisation of higher order loop corrections requires the definition of a cut-off scale $\Lambda$ that defines an upper validity range and where the loop integration is performed to. This cut-off scale is usually taken to be $\Lambda_{GUT} = \mathcal{O}(10^{16} \text{ GeV})$. When calculating the loop contributions to the scalar Higgs mass one finds that the loop contribution from diagrams such as the one shown in Figure 3.1, where the Higgs particle radiates and reabsorbs a virtual particle pair give rise to a loop correction that scales quadratically with the cut off scale

$$m_H^2 = m_0^2 - \frac{|\lambda_f|^2}{8\pi^2} \Lambda^2 + \mathcal{O}(\frac{\Lambda^2}{m_f^2}), \quad (3.1)$$

For fermions these corrections scales linearly with mass and are $\mathcal{O}(m_f)$ while the corrections needed to keep the mass of $m_H \sim 125 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ are of $\mathcal{O}(\Lambda_{GUT})$. This precarious balance between such extremely large numbers means that $m_0^2$ in (3.1) must be known to $\sim 20$ digits to give the observed value. Such precision tuning is found to be unnatural and the problem is called the Hierarchy problem.

The shortcomings of the Standard Model have motivated many attempts to extend and replace it with new particle fields, more general symmetries or even completely new paradigms of reality. One thing they all have in common, is that they must describe the observations of particle experiments no matter how the theory interprets the data points behind the scene. Most alternative models contain some freedom in their parameter space and some of that space usually allows for new types of long-lived particles.

A common denominator for these challenges is that no strict experimental evidence points to a singular solution. Due to complementarity the allowed model-space is fairly restricted if the theories are not allowed to break with QFT. Many new models are therefore described as extensions to the Standard Model and not direct replacements. One approach that has been developed over the last forty or so years is called Supersymmetry (SUSY). It exploits the last viable untapped symmetry allowed without violating Lorentz invariance. The resulting theory is really treated more as a framework where various mass scale breaking schemes generate new sectors of particles. To guide the search for LLPs we adopt SUSY terminology to describe the particles of interest.

### 3.2 Supersymmetry

Symmetry is a governing principle in the construction of the Standard Model. For every conserved quantity in the theory a symmetry exists [75]. Supersymmetry stems from the idea that all the interactions in the SM should be combined into one symmetry group. It was found by Coleman and Men-dula [30] in 1967 that such a symmetry group was not feasible. Later it was discovered by Wess and Zumino [131] that a supersymmetric group was...
possible, and finally in 1975, Haag, Lopuszanski and Sohnius [57] managed to construct a non-trivial extension of the Poincaré group which is what is called supersymmetry today.

The super-symmetry is a space-time symmetry where generators $Q$ map fermionic states into bosonic and vice-versa:

$$Q |\text{Fermion}\rangle = |\text{Boson}\rangle, \quad Q |\text{Boson}\rangle = |\text{Fermion}\rangle.$$ (3.2)

To manage this transformation, the operator $Q$ must itself be of fermionic nature carrying spin-half. $Q$ and its hermitian conjugate $Q^\dagger$ are called supercharges. This further imply that the operator must satisfy the following algebra:

$$\{Q^a, Q^b\} = (\bar{\sigma}^\mu)_{ab} P_\mu$$ (3.3)

where $\sigma^\mu$ are Pauli matrices, $P_\mu$ is the four-momentum and $\{A, B\} = AB + BA$. The generality of this algebra means that every field (and particle) in the theory is affected by the SUSY contribution, leading to the following implications

- **Super-partners** of opposite spin statistics are manifested for all particles in the theory. These bosonic and fermionic states are ordered in supersymmetric multiplets or supermultiplets which are irreducible representations of the supersymmetric algebra and hence closed under transformations of $Q$ and $Q^\dagger$.

- Before electroweak symmetry breaking (EWSB) (see Sec. 2.2) the supermultiplets are massless.

- After EWSB the superpartners have equal mass as $Q$ and $Q^\dagger$ commute with the generators of the Poincaré group.

- Quantum numbers of the superpartners must be identical as $Q$ and $Q^\dagger$ are neutral with respect to internal gauge symmetries.

- The square of the generator $Q$ is equal to the four momentum which causes the concatenation of two supersymmetry transformations to form a translation in space-time.

These implications have deep consequences for the manifestation of the theory. If any superpartners with masses equal to the known Standard Model particles exists, they would have been long discovered, rendering the purest supersymmetrical theory false. For SUSY to be viable it must be a spontaneously broken symmetry where the superpartners have large enough masses for them to go undiscovered (so far).

### 3.2.1 A supersymmetrical Standard Model

Applying the principle of supersymmetry to the known Standard Model particles effectively multiplies the number of particles by two and in addition requires further particles in the Higgs sector to accommodate the EWSB mechanism. To navigate through this explosion of new particles, a naming scheme has been invented where symbols for superpartners have a ‘∼’
added, and the names of SUSY scalars are prefixed with an ‘s’, while SUSY fermions are postfixed with ‘ino’ compared with the regular Standard Model names. With this notation the super-partner of a top quark becomes a ‘stop sparticle’ denoted $\tilde{t}$, and a gluon super-partner becomes a ‘gluino’ or $\tilde{g}$.

When the minimal required number of SUSY fields is added to the SM, it results in the fields and particles listed in Table 3.1. The new particles added to the Higgs sector are needed to accommodate EWSB in this context. The fields are listed before SUSY and EW breaking. This version of SM-SUSY is called the Minimal Supersymmetric Standard Model (MSSM) which is a convenient benchmark model for SUSY but by no means motivated beyond any other SUSY scenario. In fact the MSSM extension is due to the recent discovery [106, 113] of a Higgs boson at 125 GeV/c$^2$, under some tension.

Without claiming perfect agreement with nature, MSSM is still interesting from a phenomenological perspective as it represents many of the dominant effects of SUSY and is readily calculable and thus available in a variety of computer codes for quantitative predictions.

As mentioned earlier SUSY must be a broken symmetry as no degenerate mass states have been observed for any SM particles. The breaking of SUSY can be constructed in multiple ways and is one of the major variations to the model assumptions when searching for MSSM SUSY experimentally.

The breaking of the symmetry is done through what is called ‘soft SUSY breaking’ where additional terms are added to the SUSY Lagrangian. These terms are not invariant under SUSY transformations but not contributive at the high energies of the (unbroken) SUSY scale. By allowing the superpartners to couple to these terms they can gain masses, different than their SM partners.

To implement SUSY breaking it is common to define a “hidden sector” where the symmetry is spontaneously broken. To induce the soft breaking, particles in this hidden sector couples to the supermultiplets in the visible MSSM sector via hypothetical messenger fields to manifest the soft breaking terms in the lagrangian density. This mediation between the hidden and the visible sector can take place in different ways depending on model assumptions.

The most common SUSY breaking scenarios are called Gauge Mediated

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Supermultiplet</th>
<th>SM field</th>
<th>Superfield</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Quarks:</td>
<td>$t_{uL}, d_L$</td>
<td>$\tilde{t}<em>{uL}, \tilde{d}</em>{L}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$u_R$</td>
<td>$\tilde{u}^*_{R}$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$d_R$</td>
<td>$\tilde{d}^*_{R}$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leptons:</td>
<td>$\nu_L, l_L$</td>
<td>$\tilde{\nu}_L, \tilde{l}_L$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$e_R$</td>
<td>$\tilde{e}^*_{R}$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gauge bosons:</td>
<td>$g^a, a = 1, \ldots, 8$</td>
<td>$\tilde{g}^a$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$W^\alpha, \alpha = 1, 2, 3$</td>
<td>$\tilde{W}^\alpha$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$B$</td>
<td>$\tilde{B}$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Higgs bosons:</td>
<td>$(H^0_1, H^+_1)$</td>
<td>$(\tilde{H}^0_1, \tilde{H}^-_1)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$(H^0_2, H^+_2)$</td>
<td>$(\tilde{H}^0_2, \tilde{H}^-_2)$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Supersymmetry Breaking (GMSB), Minimal Supergravity (mSUGRA) and Anomaly Mediated Supersymmetry Breaking (AMSB).

As a broken symmetry, many of the fundamental particles in Table 3.1 share quantum numbers which allows for superpositional particle states. To accommodate these, mixing matrices and CP-violation phase parameters are introduced into the lagrangian, expanding the number of free parameters dramatically\(^3\). To retain some of the beauty of the unbroken theory, many of the scenarios attempt to relate these parameters to each other. mSUGRA for instance is a constrained scenario (CMSSM) where only five parameters actually exists at the unification scale \((m_0, m_{1/2}, A_0, \tan\beta, \text{sign } \mu)\). These parameters then unfold at the electroweak scale into a specific mass and mixing spectrum during the soft breaking phase. The resulting mixing of gauginos and higgsinos leads to the formation of neutralinos \(\chi^0\) and charginos \(\chi^\pm\). Also the heavy sleptons \(\tilde{\tau}_L\) and \(\tilde{\tau}_R\) will mix to form mass eigenstates \(\tilde{\tau}_1\) and \(\tilde{\tau}_2\). Similarly, in the quark sector stops and sbottoms form mass mixing states.

\subsection*{3.2.2 R-parity}

In many MSSM models, baryon and lepton-number conservation are violated. As a consequence the proton will undergo rapid decay, something clearly not in tune with observation. To avoid this theoretical disaster a conserved quantity called R-parity is introduced

\begin{align*}
R &= (-1)^{3(B-L)+2S}. \quad (3.4)
\end{align*}

\(B\) and \(L\) are baryon and lepton numbers respectively and \(S\) is the particle spin. This means that all SM particles have \(R = +1\), while SUSY particles have \(R = -1\). Besides avoiding proton decay to SUSY particles, R-parity implies that SUSY particles must be pair-produced if produced by SM interactions

\begin{align*}
R_{\text{tot}} &= R_{\text{SM}}^1 R_{\text{SM}}^2 = 1^2 = R_{\text{SUSY}}^1 R_{\text{SUSY}}^2 = (-1)^2 = 1. \quad (3.5)
\end{align*}

It also have the important consequence that the supersymmetric particle with the lowest mass must conserve R-parity, and hence is stable by not being able to decay to SM particles. This Lightest Supersymmetric Particle (LSP) can be a dark matter candidate. Depending on the definition of ‘dark’, most ascribe only SUSY models with a Weakly Interacting Massive Particle (WIMP) as the LSP any dark matter candidacy. This is most often a neutralino \(\chi^0\). The main motivation for introducing R-parity was originally to avoid proton decay. It is still possible to avoid proton decay while still leaving certain R-parity violated for some particles by tuning the ‘level’ of violation i.e. by how long-lived certain particles are. Such SUSY models are called R-parity Violating SUSY or RPV-SUSY and host a number of LLP candidates.

\subsection*{3.2.3 SUSY production at the LHC}

At the Large Hadron Collider SUSY particles can only be produced in pairs if we assume the MSSM and R-parity conservation. The dominant production mechanism at the hadron collider is through strong interactions of either gluon-gluon, gluon-quark or quark-quark pairs. The most dominant of these

\[^3\] 21 mass parameters
36 mixing angles
48 CP-violation phases
\(\approx 105\) free parameters
is gluon-gluon up to a certain energy (Sec. 9.2.1). Weak processes could also lead to production of charginos, neutralinos and sleptons but the hadronic nature of the LHC greatly favours the strong interactions, as can be seen in Figure 3.2.

### 3.2.4 SUSY decay processes

It is illustrative to summarise the possible decay mechanisms of the various SUSY particles even if we are studying long-lived particles where such decays are ignored. This is relevant if we would be interested in meta-stable particles that decay somewhere within the detector volume i.e. if the decay length is $0.1 \, \text{m} < c\tau < 10 \, \text{m}$.

**Gluinos** decay through $\tilde{g} \rightarrow q\tilde{q}$, if it is kinematically allowed, otherwise they can decay through a virtual squark to neutralinos or charginos $\tilde{g} \rightarrow q\bar{q}^{(1)}\chi^{0/(\pm)}$. In the case that squarks are not kinematically favoured, the gluino can decay through $\tilde{g} \rightarrow g\chi^0$.

**Squarks** decay through $\tilde{q} \rightarrow q\tilde{g}$ if it is kinematically allowed, otherwise they decay to charginos or neutralinos $\tilde{q} \rightarrow q^{(1)}\chi^{0/(\pm)}$. A direct decay to the lightest neutralino $\chi^0_1$ is kinematically preferred.

**Sleptons** usually decay to charginos or neutralinos and a lepton $\tilde{l} \rightarrow l\chi^0$, $\tilde{l} \rightarrow l\chi^{\pm}$ and $\tilde{\nu} \rightarrow \nu\chi^0$, $\tilde{\nu} \rightarrow l\chi^{\pm}$. Both squark and slepton decays are sensitive to the chirality of the sparticle which stems from the amount of Bino and Wino mixture in right-handed and left-handed sparticles respectively, changing the decay preference depending on the handedness.

**Neutralinos and Charginos** are mixtures of gauginos and higgsinos as mentioned earlier. This allows for a variety of mass scale dependent decays.
which are heavily dependent on the SUSY scenario [73].

In general the richness of the combined SUSY and SM particle spectrum allows for quite complex event topologies where jets, missing energy and an assortment of leptons are produced in cascade decays. In SUSY configurations where decay modes are suppressed to restrain a sparticle from decaying, LLPs will be introduced into these topologies as well. Such LLP searches with associated cascade decays are typically explored within RPV-SUSY. In the scenario pursued in this thesis we avoid the rest of SUSY phenomenology by exclusively looking for LLPs, but naturally more involved searches can be performed based on these techniques.

### 3.2.5 Choosing the right scenario

Even with only a handful of MSSM scenarios\(^4\) the choice of input parameters is daunting. The search strategy chosen by the LHC experiments mainly focus on jets and missing energy signatures. The assumption is that these signatures are pronounced in most scenarios and hence most widely tests a broad range of SUSY parameter-space. By comparing regions of CMSSM excluded by ATLAS [31], with roughly 71k model points they found that this search strategy was mostly a sound approach with good coverage. What they also found was that the regions with the weakest sensitivity were the areas where long-lived particles were produced. This study provides a great incentive to further develop the methods for LLP searches in the context of SUSY. In Table 3.2 they show that hundreds of model points yield LLPs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>(\hat{M})</th>
<th>(10^{-15})</th>
<th>(10^{-16})</th>
<th>(10^{-17})</th>
<th>(10^{-18})</th>
<th>(10^{-19})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{\chi}_{11}^\pm)</td>
<td>9853</td>
<td>9728</td>
<td>8642</td>
<td>7683</td>
<td>6658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{\chi}_{1}^0)</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{\chi}_{1}^\pm)</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>66</td>
<td>66</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{\chi}_{2}^\pm)</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{\chi}_{2}^0)</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{\chi}_{3}^\pm)</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{t})</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{c})</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{s})</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\tilde{g})</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^4\) Note that MSSM is followed by NMSSM, the next to minimal supersymmetric Standard Model, and after that the NNMMSSM and so on. SUSY in any meaningful sense is a mathematical framework where the actual implementation in general must be chosen based on the principle of 'least action', meaning the simplest model fitting observation.

Coloured sparticles with widths \(\Gamma < \Lambda_{QCD}\) can hadronise into bound states with SM quarks, called \(R\)-\textit{Hadrons}. These particles are the main benchmark object of this thesis and the study shows that thousands of model points allow for these objects (Table 3.3).

The general search for LLPs is even within generic SUSY scenarios well motivated but other more specific models within SUSY predict LLPs, one which has served as the benchmark for phenomenologists and experimentalists alike is called \textit{split supersymmetry}.
Table 3.3: The number of coloured sparticles with widths < 100 MeV in the model-point space investigated in [31]. These numbers reflect all types with widths larger than the hadronisation scale and not necessarily long-lived particles, Ref. [31].

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Particle</th>
<th>Models</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{g}$</td>
<td>12598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{u}_L$</td>
<td>9628</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{c}_L$</td>
<td>9629</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{u}_R$</td>
<td>22667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{c}_R$</td>
<td>22668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{d}_L$</td>
<td>13595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{d}_R$</td>
<td>27996</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{t}_L$</td>
<td>27998</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{t}_R$</td>
<td>13555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{b}_1$</td>
<td>431</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{b}_2$</td>
<td>5695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\tilde{t}_1$</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3.3 Split-Supersymmetry

One of the leading motivations behind the previously mentioned SUSY scenarios is the curing of the Hierarchy problem (Sec. 3.1) in a natural way. It has been argued [10, 9] that naturalness as an argument for selecting certain models is somewhat excessive in the light of the cosmological constant that requires a much greater level of fine-tuning in any of the known theories enacting electroweak symmetry breaking. Based on this level of reasoning naturalness becomes less relevant and is effectively left to the anthropic principle by the authors of a new theory called Split Supersymmetry (SSUSY). Instead the theory’s main focus is to avoid proton decay, support a Higgs particle with mass larger than the LEP limit of 114 GeV/$c^2$ and providing a realistic dark matter candidate. SSUSY accomplishes this by replacing low energy SUSY with a two new mass scales. All the supersymmetric scalars (squarks, sleptons) are placed at a high mass scale $m_S$, except the Higgs boson which can be accommodated in the mass region where it has been found in 2012. All the SUSY fermions (charginos, neutralinos, gluino) are allowed to be relatively light.

A side-effect of this theory is that the decay of gluinos to squarks ($\tilde{g} \rightarrow q\tilde{q}$) is suppressed by the large mass difference between the two mass scales. Due to this decay suppression the life-time of the gluino is effectively coupled to the mass scale difference

$$\tau_{\tilde{g}} = 4s \left( \frac{\text{TeV}/c^2}{m_S} \right)^5 \left( \frac{m_S}{10^9 \text{GeV}/c^2} \right)^4$$  (3.6)

A typical value for $m_S$ is $> 10^{10}$ GeV/$c^2$ which makes the lifetime of the gluino $\tau \sim O(1 \text{ s})$. The mass of the Higgs particle is closely linked with the mass scale $m_S$ in SSUSY. The recent discovery of a Higgs particle effectively limits the value of the mass scale below $10^7$ GeV as can be seen in Figure 3.3. Thus the Higgs discovery has large ramifications for the search for SSUSY as it limits the lifetime of the gluino dramatically. The SSUSY sensitivity at ATLAS and the LHC given this constraint is explored in Chapter 10.

3.4 Other models with LLPs

GMSB provides justification [52] for searching for long-lived staus. In specific cases the gravitino is the LSP and the stau is the NLSP. This leads to a
lifetime of

\[ c\tau_{\text{NLSP}} = 0.1 \text{ mm} \times \left( \frac{100 \text{ GeV}}{c^2 m_{\text{NLSP}}} \right)^5 \times \left( \frac{m_{\tilde{G}}}{2.4 \text{ eV}} \right) \]  (3.7)

where \( \tilde{G} \) is the mass of the Gravitino.

SUSY scenarios provide a plethora of LLPs as was found in Sec. 3.2.5 and it is easy to forget that other BSM theories such as Universal Extra Dimensions [11] and Minimal Walking Technicolor [49] also predicts such particles.
3.5 Dark matter

Dark matter (DM) was proposed in the early thirties as a placeholder substance\(^6\) to account for orbital velocities which are much higher than expected in the halo regions of galaxies, if only visible matter contributed gravitationally \([77, 138]\). The problem is, based on our current understanding of the universe, either that some unseen mass must be distributed in the universe, or that the laws of gravitation are inaccurate\(^7\).

3.5.1 Galactic rotation curves

An object in a stable Keplerian orbit with radius \(r\) should move with a rotational velocity \(v \sim \sqrt{M(r)/r}\) where \(M(r)\) is the integrated mass within the orbit. If the object lies outside the visible part of the galaxy we should expect the velocity to drop off Newtonian \(v(r) \sim 1/\sqrt{r}\), assuming the observation of light emitted by orbiting structure to be correlated with mass\(^8\). Instead of the expected drop-off, the velocity flattens to a constant value out at the largest radii observed (for our galaxy: \(v \sim 240\) km/s \([125]\)). If we assume Newtonian gravity is correct, the velocity would imply a ‘dark halo’-contribution surrounding and pervading the galaxies with a mass density \(\rho(r) \sim 1/r^2\) or: \(M(r) \sim r\). If the galaxies are not floating in a common dark matter ‘pudding’, we must assume that the halo drops off at some point, but it is not yet clear where. As we don’t know where the dark halo mass contribution actually ends, a lower bound on the galactic DM density is found to be \(\Omega_{DM} \gtrsim 0.1\) with \(\Omega_X \equiv \rho_X/\rho_{crit}\) where for a flat universe the total density is \(\Omega_{tot} = 1\).

\(\text{The Bullet cluster}\) A (seemingly) strong argument for particle dark matter is the observation of the ‘Bullet’ cluster (1E0657-558) shown in Figure 3.4. In the figure an overlay of the gravitational field extracted from weak gravitational lensing observations with the Hubble Space Telescope (HST) is shown on top of an x-ray photograph from the Chandra X-Ray Observatory (CXO). If only the visible matter contributed to the gravitational potential deflecting light from the galaxies behind, then the overlay and the hot gas in Figure 3.4b would match up. This is not the case, and it has been taken as evidence for...
dark matter found outside the zone of x-ray emitting gas. It should also be noted that due to the very asymmetrical configuration (thought to arise from an earlier collision with another galaxy cluster) it is also unlikely that modified Newtonian gravity (MOND) can account for the offset. It is therefore – based on this and similar observations inferred that DM is particle-like in nature [19].

3.5.2 Dark matter particle candidates

Cosmology disfavours electric and colour-charged DM, but allows for weak interactions. If dark matter is connected to the SM in any way (anthropically speaking) we can produce it with colliders and observe it and it is likely a Weakly Interacting Massive Particle (WIMP). Non-WIMP long-lived particles have strongly constrained lifetimes, masses and charges [45]. This is due to the effect on the expansion history of the universe. If a massive particle was produced with any significant abundance, it would change the energy density and hence the overall metric of the universe, leading to disagreement with observation. Another constraint comes from the LLP decaying and offsetting the relative abundance of light elements or be directly visible today as red-shifted gamma-rays. Also any large abundance of charged massive particles would likely have been found in isotope [7, 5, 134, 15, 96, 95, 37] or magnetic monopole searches [8].

In addition, if DM has particle-nature\(^9\), it must be subjected to certain constraints imposed from the CMB, relic abundance and ability to stay ‘dark’ in observations of light emission. In simple terms, DM must adhere to the following criteria [19]:

- Non-relativistic at the formation phase of galaxies
- Stable at cosmological time-scales
- Very weak interaction with electromagnetic radiation
- Relic density matching observations from CMB.

Many models exist that predicts particles with these characteristics: Kaluza-Klein B(1) particles [88], Sterile neutrinos [38], Axions [33], T-Photons [21], Q-balls [50, 68], Mirror baryons [60], D-Matter [89], Self-interacting dark matter [98], Cryptons [41], Super-WIMPs [47], 4-gen. fermions [136], technibaryons [76], Primordial black holes [54] and Supersymmetric weakly interacting massive particles (WIMPs) to mention some of all the creative names out there (see [125, 45, 19] for excellent reviews).

What all these models have in common (except for black holes) are their WIMP-like signatures. The most common WIMP model today is Supersymmetry (SUSY) with R-parity conservation. SUSY as we shall see, can manifest a DM candidate in multiple ways but in general the lightest mass state, or lightest supersymmetric partner (LSP) is conserved by the introduction of a conserved quantum number \(R\) in SUSY (Sec. 3.2.2). An interesting possibility within SUSY is the presence of quasi-stable particles that later decay to the LSP. This opens up for coloured and charged LLPs with lifetimes short enough to avoid some of the constraints that the real dark matter (the LSP) is bounded by.

\(^9\) That all DM is contained in a single particle type is rather unlikely, at least we know that neutrinos contribute to the mass density, and nothing hinders a complex particle hierarchy in describing the ‘dark sector’.
3.6 Previous searches

The wide implications of a new type of massive long-lived particle is reflected in the variety of techniques applied in the search for them. The scope of this thesis is searches at colliders (Table 9) but out of general interest some of the nowadays less conventional searches are reported here as well.

Searches are conducted under a wide range of assumptions and sensitivity ranges that merits further categorisation beyond simply stating that particles are long-lived.

Following the classifications in [45] we divide the searches into three classes

1. General searches for LLPs, without any additional assumptions on the LLP beyond a charge or mass sensitivity range. Limits are placed on the production cross section.

2. Quantum number constrained searches, minimal model assumptions such as possible loop corrections from additional particles in the BSM model. Production cross sections serve as upper limits but mass exclusion limits can be placed as well.

3. Model specific searches, where the full parameter space of a specific model is applied to constrain the particle hypothesis.

The categories are in practice somewhere blurred as a general search might be severely limited by detector sensitivity that implicitly limits the generality of the result, while a model specific search might place limits on a specific hypothesis while the selection could be open to alternative interpretations given broad detection sensitivity within the hypothesis space. The latter case is illustrated by the search for long-lived super-symmetrical particles at the LHC. These searches are, as we shall see in later chapters based very loosely on SUSY assumptions, and can be reinterpreted to encompass searches for multi-charged particles, universal extra dimensions and various other models detectable by slow-moving charged particles. It can be quite a headache to unfold assumptions and constraints from both assumed theories.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>300 – 1500</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.008 a</td>
<td>gluino $\tilde{g} = 10%$, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[111]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>200 – 1000</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.005 a</td>
<td>stop, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[111]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>200 – 1000</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.009 a</td>
<td>sbottom, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[111]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>200 – 500</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>min.0.002 a</td>
<td>stau, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[111]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>CMS</td>
<td>300 – 1500</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.009 a</td>
<td>gluino $\tilde{g} = 10%$, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[114]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>CMS</td>
<td>200 – 1000</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.005 a</td>
<td>stop, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[114]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, pp</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>CMS</td>
<td>100 – 600</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>min.0.001 a</td>
<td>stau, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[114]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8, pp</td>
<td>18.8</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>300 – 1500</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.001 a</td>
<td>gluino $\tilde{g} = 10%$, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[114]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8, pp</td>
<td>18.8</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>200 – 1000</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>0.01 – 0.001 b</td>
<td>stop, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[114]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8, pp</td>
<td>18.8</td>
<td>ATLAS</td>
<td>100 – 600</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>min.0.0005 a</td>
<td>stau (and $</td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.96, ep</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>CDF</td>
<td>100 – 260</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>(0.09)</td>
<td>stop, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[112]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.96, ep</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>D0</td>
<td>100 – 300</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>(0.02)</td>
<td>stau, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[115]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.96, ep</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>D0</td>
<td>100 – 300</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>(0.01)</td>
<td>Gaugino, Tracker+TOF</td>
<td>[115]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.3, ep</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>H1</td>
<td>&lt; 100</td>
<td>±1</td>
<td>190</td>
<td>Tracker</td>
<td>[117]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 3.4: Selected searches for SMPs at colliders.

* These searches are part of the study presented in Chapter 9, but are shown here as they represent the latest results from ATLAS at the time of writing.

b The mass range between 100 and 500 GeV have slightly worse limits.
and the detector sensitivity. Hence, care must be taken when attempting such re interpretations.

Nevertheless the most basic properties will be listed in the following tables and the reader should carefully consult the reference for further assumptions on the basis of the individual analysis.

If SMPs are produced in nature then depending on the abundance we would be able to find them in our local environment. Electrically charged particles with large masses may bind to other particles forming heavy hydrogen or anomalous molecules. Coloured SMPs may be found in nuclides where they contribute as either charged or neutral components. These ‘R-hadronides’ can be looked for with mass spectrometry where the mass-to-charge ratio is abnormally large. Table 3.5 summaries single charged ‘heavy hydrogen’ searched, performed by analysing sea water. Table 3.6 lists searches for neutral strongly interacting particles embedded into known nuclei.

The possible concentration of low-Z heavy nuclei in water is dependent on the depth of sea\textsuperscript{10}. During the eighties and nineties surveys in three regions have been undertaken.\footnote{Based on the delusion of heavy water in water a fall rate is found to be \(v_{\text{fall}} \sim \frac{M_2 D}{kT} \) where \(D = 1.4 \times 10^{-5} \text{cm}^2\text{s}^{-1}\).}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Concentration (X/N)</th>
<th>Charge ([e])</th>
<th>Mass ([\text{GeV}/c^2])</th>
<th>CL</th>
<th>Comment</th>
<th>Ref</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 4 \times 10^{-20})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: C</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 8 \times 10^{-20})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: C</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 2 \times 10^{-16})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: C</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 6 \times 10^{-13})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: Li</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 1 \times 10^{-11})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: Be</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 6 \times 10^{-14})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: B</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 4 \times 10^{-17})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: O</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 4 \times 10^{-15})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>Embedded in: F</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 3.5: Upper limits on concentration of stable neutral particles embedded in nuclei Ref. [125].

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Concentration (X/H)</th>
<th>Charge ([e])</th>
<th>Mass ([\text{GeV}/c^2])</th>
<th>CL</th>
<th>Comment</th>
<th>Ref</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 4 \times 10^{-17})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5 – 1600</td>
<td>95%</td>
<td>0.25 l deep sea water, (d = 4000 \text{m})</td>
<td>[135]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 6 \times 10^{-15})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>(10^7 – 3 \times 10^6)</td>
<td>95%</td>
<td>8.8 l sea water (d = 2800 \text{m})</td>
<td>[130]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 3 \times 10^{-20})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>(10^5 – 10^4)</td>
<td>90%</td>
<td>sea water</td>
<td>[59]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&lt; 10^{-28})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>10 – 1000</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>16\mu l enriched D\textsubscript{2}O (\sim 1.2 \times 10^9) l (\text{H}_2\text{O}, d \sim 0(60\text{m}))</td>
<td>[96]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 3.6: Upper limits on concentration of stable charged particles in matter Ref. [125].

**3.7 Conclusion**

From a theoretical point of view, long-lived particles are well motivated. SUSY with its wide parameter-space hosts thousands of model points which imply LLPs. Dark matter poses an observational enigma that in many ways are bound to LLPs. It is possible that they are in fact WIMPs and can be described by SUSY. It can also be something else, and while people are quick to rule out CHAMPs or Charged Massive Particles as DM candidates, on various grounds, it is still too early to say anything with complete certainty.
Previous searches for charged LLPs have indeed come up empty, so it is clear that whatever is out there, is less obvious than we have hoped. Even if the theoretical motivations outline here where not sufficient to convince the reader, the access to new collider energies, at high intensities is sufficient motivation for a search for LLPs, given the history of particle discovery in the twentieth century.
II Principles of particle detection
Particle detection and identification

The basic design principle in modern particle detectors relies on the ionisation or excitation of atoms in detector material. This chiefly allows for the study of charged particles that through Coulomb interactions with either atomic electrons or nuclei deposit energy that can be collected by counting photons from excitations or electrons from ionisation. While the actual techniques differ depending on the particle of interest and whether the objective is trajectory determination, particle identification or calorimetric energy measurements, the basic principles are the same. Hadrons have the additional possibility of nuclear scattering whereby they fragment to form new particles. This process is extremely relevant to the search for coloured long-lived particles as it gives rise to a characteristic phenomena we call ‘charge-flipping’. In this chapter these principles will be reviewed as the future chapters rely on them.

The main sources for this chapter are [87, 125, 91, 56] where nothing else is mentioned.

4.1 Electromagnetic interactions

Charged particles passing through matter have a chance of momentum transfer (Sec. 4.1.2) and deflection (Sec. 4.1.1) when passing near an atom. The momentum transfer can lead to the excitation of electrons with subsequent release of light or ionisation where the free electrons can be collected by an anode and amplified as a signal. Electrons and positrons suffers additional effects due to their lightness (and their shared identity with atomic electrons). The primary source of energy loss for electrons and positrons is bremsstrahlung (Sec. 4.1.3) where energy is radiated in the form of photons, from the electron as it is deflected (and decelerated) in the presence of a nucleus. High energy photons typically interact with nuclei by pair-production of electron-positron pairs. The production of photons due to bremsstrahlung, combined with the pair-production from photons can lead to an electromagnetic cascade (Sec. 4.1.5) where the energy of an incoming photon or electron is dissipated in the medium by successive photon and pair production.

4.1.1 Electromagnetic multiple scattering

When a charged particle traverses a medium it is susceptible to deflection through Coulomb interactions with atomic nuclei. For small angles $\theta_0$ the
average multiple scattering (MS) is approximately gaussian with an angular
distribution width as a function of the thickness of the medium \( x \) given by

\[
\theta_0 = \frac{13.6 \text{ MeV}}{\beta c p} z \sqrt{x/X_0} \left[ 1 + 0.038 \ln(x/X_0) \right].
\] (4.1)

With \( \beta c, p \) and \( z \) being the velocity, momentum and charge of the incoming
particle respectively. \( X_0 \) is called the radiation length (Sec. 4.1.3) and is given
in units of g cm\(^{-2}\) and is proportional to the distance a high energy electron
will travel before having lost a significant amount of its energy. (4.1) captures
the central 98% of the distribution. Figure 4.1 illustrates how (4.1) relates to
the deflection \( y_{\text{plane}} \) after traversing a distance \( x \). From (4.1) it is clear that
the scattering chiefly affects low-energy particles or particles with a large
effective charge \( z \).

With Monte Carlo simulation, an easy way to calculate \( \theta_{\text{plane}} \) and \( y_{\text{plane}} \) is
to produce two gaussian random numbers \( r_1 \) and \( r_2 \) and calculate,

\[
y_{\text{plane}} = r_1 x \theta_0 \sqrt{12} + r_2 x \theta_0 / 2
\] (4.2)

\[
\theta_{\text{plane}} = r_2 \theta_0
\] (4.3)

Where the first term in (4.2) handles the correlation between the two vari-
ables. Multiple scattering as described here, accounts for a 2-dimensional
scattering plane, but since MS can be assumed to be independent in both di-
rections, a 3-d estimate can be found by applying (4.2) and (4.3) twice one
time for each component [125, chap. 31]

\[
\theta_0 = \theta_{\text{rms}}^{\text{plane}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \theta_{\text{rms}}^{\text{space}}.
\] (4.4)

### 4.1.2 Electromagnetic ionisation loss

Charged particles can lose energy through multiple processes. for massive
particles with mass \( M c^2 \gg m_e c^2 \) energy loss through ionisation of atoms in
the medium is a dominant contribution. The ionisation happens via elastic
Coulomb interactions with atomic electrons illustrated in Figure 4.2.

From a statistical point of view, the mean energy loss per distance \( \langle dE / dx \rangle \)
is a sum of individual energy contributions from all the electron interactions
happening during the traversal \( dx \) of the incident particle,

\[
\Delta E = \sum_{n=1}^{N} \delta E_n.
\] (4.5)
The individual contribution $\Delta E$ is quite complex especially at low energy, so we will limit ourselves to the mean energy loss that when treated statistically is called straggling. In semi-classical terms (developed by N. Bohr [23, 24]) we consider the interaction of a massive particle with a single electron as a function of the impact parameter $b$ (Figure 4.3) then the momentum transfer due to the Coulomb force is

$$\Delta p = \int F \, dt = \int F \frac{1}{v} \, dx = \frac{2e^2}{bv}, \quad (4.6)$$

and the single energy transfer is

$$\Delta E(b) = \frac{\Delta p^2}{2m_e} = \frac{2e^2e_4}{m_e b^2 v^2}. \quad (4.7)$$

The barrel in Figure 4.4 is assumed to contain $N_e = n(2\pi b) db dx$ electrons where $n$ is the electron density$^1$.

We find that:

$$-dE(b) = \frac{\Delta p^2}{2m_e} 2\pi n b \, db \, dx = \frac{4n \pi^2 e^4 }{m_e v^2} \int_{b_{\text{min}}}^{b_{\text{max}}} \frac{db}{b} \, dx \quad (4.9)$$

If we integrate over the impact parameter $db$ we see a divergence as $b \to 0$ as we would expect due to the inverse square law. Instead we constrain the integration to a range $[b_{\text{min}}, b_{\text{max}}]$:

$$-\frac{dE}{dx} = \frac{4\pi n \pi^2 e^4}{m_e v^2} \int_{b_{\text{min}}}^{b_{\text{max}}} \frac{db}{b} = \frac{4\pi^2 e^4}{m_e v^2} \ln \left( \frac{b_{\text{max}}}{b_{\text{min}}} \right). \quad (4.10)$$

Selecting the integration range in a meaningful way can be done setting the minimum distance $b_{\text{min}}$ to the radius of the electron by saying that it should be located within its de Broglie wavelength,

$$b_{\text{min}} = \lambda_e = \frac{h}{p} = \frac{2\pi h}{\gamma m_e v}. \quad (4.11)$$

The outer range $b_{\text{max}}$ is limited by the assumption that the electron is fixed in space relative to the incoming particles (as it is found in a region bound by the location of the nucleus). That is to say, we place a limit on the interaction time ($b/v$) which is shorter then the electron revolution time ($\gamma/v_e$):

$$b_{\text{max}} = \frac{\gamma v}{v_e}. \quad (4.12)$$

Putting it all together and we arrive at the Bohr equation:

$$-\left( \frac{dE}{dx} \right) = \frac{4\pi^2 e^4}{m_e c^2 \beta^2 \gamma^2} n \ln \frac{m_e c^2 \beta^2 \gamma^2}{2\pi \hbar \langle v_e \rangle}. \quad (4.13)$$

The general form of the curve in Figure 4.5 can be understood by a kinematical drop that happens when the incident particles pass the electrons faster, i.e. they have less time to interact with the individual electrons the faster they move. The minimum at $\beta \gamma \sim 3 - 4$ is called the minimum ionising region. For particles with $\beta \gamma > 4$, relativistic effects Lorentz transforms ($E_e \to \gamma E_e$) the electric field, increasing the interaction cross section and leading to a ‘relativistic raise’ of the curve.

1 Electron density:

$$n = \frac{N_o Z/A}{6.022 \times 10^{23} \text{ mol}^{-1}} \quad (4.8)$$

where $N_o = 6.022 \times 10^{23}$ is Avogadro’s constant, $Z$ is the atomic number and $A$ the mass number of the material.

![Figure 4.3: Coulomb interaction between an incoming particle with mass $M$, velocity $\vec{v}$ and charge $e$ and an electron at rest $\vec{e}$. $b$ is the impact parameter.](image)

![Figure 4.4: Barrel with $N_e$ electrons.](image)

![Figure 4.5: $dE/dx$ for muons in copper. The lines show the Bohr equation (4.13) and the complete Bethe-Bloch equation (4.14) with and without the density correction at high energies as a function of speed.](image)
**Bethe-Bloch formula** Bohr developed his stopping formula (4.13) in 1913, it has later been revised with a quantum mechanical treatment and the more full formula is:

\[-\frac{dE}{dx} = KZ \frac{1}{\Lambda} \left[ \frac{1}{2} \ln \frac{2m_e c^2 \beta^2 \gamma^2 T_{\text{max}}}{1} - \beta^2 - \frac{\delta(\beta \gamma)}{2}\right]\]  

(4.14)

Where \( K = 4\pi N \alpha^2 m_e c^2 = 0.307 \text{ MeV g}^{-1} \text{ cm}^2 \) and \( T_{\text{max}} = \frac{2m_e c^2 \beta^2 \gamma^2}{1+2\beta\gamma/(M/m_e)} \)

is the \textit{maximum energy transfer} in a single collision and \( \delta(\beta \gamma) \) is a \textit{density correction} due to polarisation of the medium that reduces long range contributions by shielding the particle from far away charges. In addition to the density correction a small \textit{shell correction} at low velocities is added to account for particles moving at intra-atomic speeds (Figure 4.5).

The Bethe-Bloch equation in its full form is mainly depending on the medium and the velocity of the incoming particle. This makes it an excellent estimator for particle velocity as long as we know if the particle is in the kinematical or the relativistic regime. If it is further combined with a momentum measurement we can calculate the rest mass. One thing we must consider is that the Bethe-Bloch equation gives us a \textit{mean value} of what is in fact a sum of highly complex interactions. The actual interactions are found to obey a Landau distribution which is a highly asymmetrical distribution with a long tail toward high energies.

The \textit{Landau-Vavilov equation} From the Landau distribution in Figure 4.6 we can see that for moderately thick mediums (often found in particle detectors), the Most Probable Value (MPV) is much lower than the mean value expected from (4.14). In practice the Vavilov equation is much more appropriate:

\[\Delta_p = \xi \left[ \ln \frac{2m_e c^2 \beta^2 \gamma^2}{I} + \ln \frac{\xi}{2} + j - \beta^2 - \delta(\beta \gamma) \right].\]  

(4.15)

Where \( \xi = (K/2) <Z/A>(x/\beta^2) \text{ MeV}, j = 0.200. \)
The form of the Landau distribution is not easily parameterisable, but it is approximated with a MPV from (4.15) and a width $w = 4\xi$ as

$$f(\Delta/x) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp \left[ -\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\Delta/x - a(\Delta/x)_{\text{mp}}}{\xi} \right)^2 + e^{-\left( \frac{\Delta/x - a(\Delta/x)_{\text{mp}}}{\xi} \right)} \right].$$

(4.16)

These considerations are naturally of theoretical nature and is mainly important to us during simulations as the actual measurement is smeared and distorted by detector effects. In practice we develop an empirical model specifically for our instruments when using energy loss as a $\beta$ estimator.

### 4.1.3 Bremsstrahlung

Charged particles with sufficient energy can interact electrically with the Coulomb field of atomic nuclei. This type of interaction is called bremsstrahlung (Figure 4.7) and is mainly relevant for electrons and positrons as the energy loss is proportional to $1/m^2$:

$$\frac{dE}{dx} = 4\alpha N_A \frac{Z^2}{A} \left( \frac{1}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 mc^2} \right)^2 E \ln \frac{183}{Z^2} \sim E/m^2. \quad (4.17)$$

For highly energetic muons like the ones we can measure with IceCube the same effect can be observed when $E$ is sufficiently high in proportion to $1/m^2$.

**Radiation Length** For electrons bremsstrahlung is such a dominant effect that it is customary to write eq (4.17) in terms of a radiation length $X_0$, the length in a given material it takes a traversing electron to radiate all but $1/e$ of its energy:

$$\frac{dE}{dx} = \frac{E}{X_0} \quad \text{where} \quad X_0 = \frac{A}{4\alpha N_A Z^2 r_e^2 \ln \frac{183}{Z^2}}. \quad (4.19)$$

If we ignore the possible emission of low energy ($k = E_\gamma$) photons ($y = k/E \to 0$, at the infrared limit) and very high energy photons $y \to 1$ where screen becomes a problem, then the differential cross section is,

$$\frac{d\sigma}{dk} = \frac{1}{k} \left( \frac{A}{X_0 N_A} \left( 4 - \frac{4}{3}y + y^2 \right) \right). \quad (4.20)$$

The number of photons with energies between $k_{\text{min}}$ and $k_{\text{max}}$ emitted from an electron traveling a distance $x \ll X_0$ is

$$N_\gamma = \frac{x}{X_0} \left[ \frac{4}{3} \ln \left( \frac{k_{\text{max}}}{k_{\text{min}}} \right) - \frac{4(k_{\text{max}} - k_{\text{min}})}{3E} + \frac{k_{\text{max}}^2 - k_{\text{min}}^2}{2E^2} \right]. \quad (4.21)$$

At a certain point ionisation losses are more dominant than bremsstrahlung losses. This critical energy

$$E_c = \frac{610 \text{ MeV}}{Z + 1.24} \quad \text{(Solids and liquids),} \quad E_c = \frac{710 \text{ MeV}}{Z + 0.92} \quad \text{(Gasses)} \quad (4.22)$$

is the point at which an electromagnetic shower (Sec. 4.1.5) will terminate.
4.1.4 Photon pair production

The ‘inverse’ of bremsstrahlung is pair production. When photons are sufficiently energetic ($E_\gamma \gg m_e c^2$) they are able to produce electron-positron pairs. At $E_\gamma \sim 2m_e c^2 (1 + m_e / m_\gamma)$ pair production starts to become significant. The differential cross section for pair-production is similar to (4.20),

$$\frac{d\sigma}{dx} = \frac{A}{X_0 N_A} \left[ 1 - \frac{4}{3} x (1 - x) \right], \quad (4.23)$$

where $x = E/k$ is the fractional energy transferred to the $e^+ e^-$ pair.

4.1.5 Electromagnetic cascades

Electromagnetic cascades (Figure 4.9) happen when a high energy electron or photon encounter dense matter. As mentioned in the introduction, it starts either as a bremsstrahlung interaction of an incident electron or as pair production from a photon. The subsequent creation of pairs and photons continues until all photons and electron/positrons have energies below their production threshold (4.22).

The overall profile of the cascade (or shower) can be described in terms of the depth of the medium and the energy fraction (Figure 4.8) in terms of the critical energy

$$t = x / X_0, \quad y = E / E_c. \quad (4.24)$$

The development of the shower can be seen as a geometric (or recursive) series, where the total particle multiplicity (electrons, positron and photons) at depth $t$ is

$$N(t) = 2^t, \quad (4.25)$$

and the energy of the individual particles generated at $t$ is

$$E(t) = E_0 \cdot 2^{-t}. \quad (4.26)$$

The multiplicative growth continues until $E_0 / N \leq E_c$. After which point low-energy processes\(^2\) will absorb the energy. The point where the critical...
energy is reached is called the maximum multiplication step
\[ E_c = E_0 \cdot 2^{-t_{\text{max}}}. \] (4.27)

Which is then
\[ t_{\text{max}} = \frac{\ln(E_0/E_c)}{\ln 2} \sim \ln(E_0/E_c). \] (4.28)

This is all based on a ridiculous simple model but illustrates the nature of electromagnetic cascades. The concept of cascades are further explained in [56, 125].

**4.1.6 Cherenkov radiation**

Compared to the energy loss described in the previous sections, emission of Cherenkov light by charged particles is insignificant. Nevertheless it is important for detection of particles in massive ice and water neutrino detectors. It also serves a role in particle identification in collider experiments, which on its own makes it relevant for long-lived charged particle searches.

A charged particle that moves at a speed faster than the phase speed of light in a medium it traverses, emits light
\[ v \geq \frac{c_{\text{vac}}}{n_{\text{medium}}}. \] (4.29)

This means that the effect has an onset for speeds
\[ \beta \geq \frac{1}{n}. \] (4.30)

The emission is caused by the atoms in the medium becoming polarised as the charged particle moves by. When the polarisation is relaxed light is emitted by the atoms. Due to the high velocity of the charged particle the emitted radiation interferes constructively and forms a wavefront that sideslips along the particle trajectory. The wavefront has a characteristic angle relative to the particle trajectory, this Cherenkov angle
\[ \cos \theta_c = \left( \frac{1}{n\beta} \right) \quad \text{or} \quad \tan \theta_c = \sqrt{\beta^2 n^2 - 1} \] (4.31)
effectively forms a light cone around the trajectory that radiates outwards with an angle \( \theta_c \). By inserting (4.30) into \( E = \gamma m \) we find the minimum total energy a charged particle must have to radiate Cherenkov radiation
\[ E_{\min} = \frac{m}{\sqrt{1 - \frac{1}{n^2}}}. \] (4.32)

The number of photons \( N \) with wave length \( \lambda \) radiated per path length \( x \) is expressed by
\[ \frac{d^2N}{dx d\lambda} = \frac{2\pi \alpha^2}{\lambda^2} \left( 1 - \frac{1}{\beta^2 n^2(\lambda)} \right) \] (4.33)

where \( \alpha = 1/137 \) and the refraction index \( n(\lambda) \) is given as a function of wavelength [81]. For ice the number of photons in the visible range is plotted in Figure 4.10 and Figure 4.12, where \( n(\lambda) \) is
\[ n(\lambda) = 1.55749 - 1.57988\lambda + 3.99993\lambda^2 - 4.68271\lambda^3 + 2.09354\lambda^4. \] (4.34)
4.1.7 Transition radiation

Like Cherenkov radiation, Transition Radiation (TR) is an electromagnetic effect that happens when a charged particle traverses dielectric materials. Cherenkov radiation is caused by a polarising effect in a dielectric medium. TR on the other hand is an effect of the charged particle moving from one medium to another with a different dielectric constant. Intuitively the effect of TR can be understood by analogy [39]. Radiation from a uniformly moving charge in a composite medium of changing dielectric constants is analogous to radiation from a particle in non-uniform motion (undergoing acceleration). In the case of the uniformly moving particle in changing medium the phase velocity of the medium changes, while in the case of the accelerated charged particle the velocity of the particle changes relative to the reference.

The light emitted by TR is usually in the X-ray range and unlike Cherenkov radiation depends on the Lorentz factor $\gamma$ and not the speed ($\beta$) of the particle itself. This makes the effect particularly useful for particle identification of electrons at high energies. In ATLAS one of the tracking systems (Sec.6.2.3) is surrounded by material that allows the detector to serve a dual purpose as an electron-pion separator as well as tracker.

4.2 Hadronic interactions

Besides the electromagnetic interactions affecting charged particles, hadrons also have a chance interacting via the strong force. Of interest to particle detection (and LLPs) is mainly inelastic collisions where secondary hadrons are produced in the collision with nuclei in the medium.

Like the radiation length ($X_0$) for electrons characterises the interaction probability of charged particles, so does the average hadronic interaction length $\lambda_t$ describe the absorption probability in matter:

$$N = N_0 e^{-x/\lambda_t}. \quad (4.35)$$

For a medium with atomic number $A$ and density $\rho$ the hadronic interaction
4.3 Particle identification

Now that the common processes have been introduced we can summarise the principles in detecting long-lived particles. To identify a long-lived particle we need to find its rest mass $m_0$ and charge $z$. These quantities can be determined by combining multiple measurements. From track reconstruction we can find the momentum and sign ($z$) from measuring the radius $R$ of the curvature of the particle in a magnetic field (4.46). If the distances and time resolution allows it, the speed can be measured based on the particle time-of-flight (4.50). We also noted in Section. 4.1.2, that electromagnetic energy loss is related to the speed by the Bethe-Bloch formula (4.14). If it is possible to stop the particle in a calorimeter, the kinetic energy is also available

$$E_{\text{kin}} = (\gamma - 1)m_0c^2.$$ (4.41)

length is given by

$$\lambda_l = \frac{A}{N_A \rho \sigma_{\text{inel}}},$$ (4.36)

where $N_A$ is Avogadro’s constant.

The hadronic cross section

$$\sigma_{\text{total}} = \sigma_{\text{el}} + \sigma_{\text{inel}}$$ (4.37)

is for energies above the hadronisation threshold more of less constant with energy (Figure 4.13) and the inelastic component $\sigma_{\text{inel}}$ dominates as

$$\sigma_{\text{el}} \approx \mathcal{O}(10) \text{ mb}$$ (4.38)

$$\sigma_{\text{inel}} \sim A^{2/3} \text{ mb}.$$ (4.39)

As for electromagnetic showers, the production of new hadrons that can again interact leads to a hadronic cascade,

$$t = \frac{x}{\lambda_l}, \quad y = E/E_C$$ (4.40)

where $E_C = 290$ MeV enough for pair-producing pions $\pi^\pm$. With $t$ and $y$ the formulae in Electromagnetic cascades are identical. In general $\lambda_l$ is much longer than $X_0$ so it takes more matter to contain a hadronic shower than an electromagnetic one.
Another part of long-lived particle phenomenology is obviously the lifetime itself. In most cases a direct lifetime measurement requires the particle to decay somewhere within the volume of the detector and potentially within the event’s time-frame. Specific searches for stopped particles that decay out-of-time with the event have been performed [110]. The case in-between, where the LLP is not stopped and lives longer than the detector range ($\tau_0 > \frac{r_{det}}{\beta\gamma}$), the lifetime is usually unconstrained.

### 4.3.1 Momentum measurement

A charged particle moving in a magnetic field is subjected to the Lorentz force

$$\vec{F} = z(\vec{E} + \vec{v} \times \vec{B}).$$  \hfill (4.42)

That means that the propagation of the particle is governed by

$$\frac{d\vec{p}}{dt} = \frac{d(m\gamma dx/dt)}{dt} = c^2 \kappa z \vec{v}(t) \times \vec{B}(\vec{x}(t)).$$  \hfill (4.43)

Assuming no energy loss (i.e. constant velocity), we can express the particle trajectory $\vec{r}(s)$ as a function of path length $s$ along the track

$$\frac{d^2\vec{r}(s)}{ds^2} = \frac{z}{p} \frac{d\vec{r}(s)}{ds} \times \vec{B}(s).$$  \hfill (4.44)

In a cylindrical detector (like ATLAS) a solenoidal magnetic field will deflect the particles produced at the centre in the $x-y$ plane, that is to say along the circular curvature of the cylinder ($\rho$ is the radial component, $\phi$ the azimuth angle, and $z$ would be the cylindrical depth).

The curvature is measured at multiple tracking planes situated at different $\rho$. By fitting a helix equation, radius $R$ of the curvature can be related to the momentum

$$p_T = 0.3BR.$$  \hfill (4.45)

The total momentum requires information on the $\rho-z$ dip angle $\lambda$ and momentum is thus

$$p = \frac{p_T}{\cos \lambda} = \frac{0.3BR}{\cos \lambda}.$$  \hfill (4.46)

The error on the momentum is

$$\left(\frac{\Delta p}{p}\right)^2 = \left(\frac{\Delta R}{R}\right)^2 + (\tan \lambda \Delta \lambda)^2.$$  \hfill (4.47)

The error is important as it influences our mass measurement directly, and is the only factor in the estimation process that scales with the rest mass of the particle (time-of-flight and $dE/dx$ only become better and better while the stiffer the track, the worse the momentum). Another thing to note, at hadron colliders one is usually interested in the transverse component only, as momentum conservation is ‘broken’ in the event due to the compositeness of the colliding particles. For long-lived particles the mass estimate is not calculated based on the invariant mass of the collision but for each individual particle candidate, that is why the total momentum is important.
The sign of the charge is limited by the track arm-length ($L$), the detector resolution ($\sigma_y$) and number of measurements ($C_N$) \[82\]

$$p < \frac{0.3BL^2}{3\sqrt{4C_N\sigma_y}}.$$  \hspace{1cm} \text{(4.48)}

The inequality assumes a 3 standard deviation separation between the signs. For ATLAS, a momentum larger than 800 GeV will lead to sign confusion if measured only by the inner detector system (depending on the actual number of measurements $C_N$).

### 4.3.2 Identification by energy loss

The average ionisation energy loss depends on the energy of the particle. In Figure 4.14 the energy loss is plotted for electrons, muons, pions, kaons and protons in the 0.1 to 100 GeV momentum range. Since the energy loss is mass dependent, together with a momentum measurement we can distinguish the rest mass by inverting the Bethe-Bloch equation and finding $\beta\gamma$:

$$m = \frac{p}{\beta\gamma}. \hspace{1cm} \text{(4.49)}$$

The actual formula is not injective due to the kinematic falling slope and the relativistic rise. In practice we can choose to focus on one region, typically the kinematic slope and assume that every $dE/dx$ measurement above the MIP region is lying on that slope. Looking at Figure 4.14 this may seem a bit optimistic, but the density effect is not applied here (See instead Figure 4.5) that flattens the relativistic rise dramatically.

#### Truncated mean

One factor that is important is the possibility of large fluctuations in energy deposition (Figure 4.15). We know that the Landau distribution is not at all symmetric about the average energy loss, so how do we measure the average? Instead of combining all $dE/dx$ measurement along a track we can use the truncated mean, where we remove the largest $20\% - 50\%$ of the measurements and average the rest. The actual percentage depends on the number of samplings available. With many samplings the smallest $5\% - 10\%$ can be removed as well to arrive at a more gaussian distribution as illustrated in Figure 4.16.
4.3.3 Identification by time-of-flight

Mass can be measured by combining a precise Time-of-Flight (ToF) estimate with a momentum estimate:

$$\beta = \frac{L}{c \Delta t}, \quad p = c \beta \gamma m$$

(4.50)

Setting $c = 1$ →

$$\beta = \frac{L}{\Delta t}, \quad p = \beta \gamma m$$

(4.51)

Where $\Delta t = t_1 - t_0$ is the time difference between two detectors and $L$ is the distance between them. The mass uncertainty is then [87]:

$$\sigma(m^2) = 2 \left[ m^4 \left( \frac{\sigma_p}{p} \right)^2 + E^4 \left( \frac{\sigma_{\Delta t}}{\Delta t} \right)^2 + E^4 \left( \frac{\sigma_L}{L} \right)^2 \right]^{1/2},$$

(4.52)

where $E$ is the total energy of the particle: $E^2 = m^2 + p^2 = \frac{p^2 \Delta t^2}{L^2}$.

The actual measured time is a sum of multiple contributions

$$t = t_0 + t_{\text{ToF}} + t_{\text{drift}} + t_{\text{electronics}} + t_{\text{DAQ}}$$

(4.53)

each with its own uncertainties. $t_0$ is the trigger time offset from the actual interaction. In ATLAS it is the bunch crossing time, in IceCube (Chap. 11) it is the offset from when the interaction happened to when the first photomultiplier tube was struck. $t_{\text{ToF}}$ itself is also not as uncomplicated as a straight line, bending in the magnetic field, breaking in material and so on modifies the assumed $\Delta t$. Depending on the detector itself the signal formation time in the detector adds an appreciable delay. In IceCube the time from when a photon hits the PMT to the signal is formed roughly 4 ns [121]. Electronic readout also contributes jitter and shaping to the signal, that again takes a finite time to arrive at the signal collecting station ($t_{\text{DAQ}}$).

In general ToF is dependent on the length of the flight path, the detector time resolution and the number of independent measurements available ($\sigma_{\Delta t} = \sigma_{\text{det}} / \sqrt{N_{\text{meas}}}$).
4.4 Summary

This chapter has served as an atomic interlude that will provide the experimental basis for the rest of the thesis. With the knowledge of how matter will behave when subjected to highly energetic charged particles we can now continue with a practical introduction on how to measure these signatures with the systems in ATLAS. In summary, the key findings in this chapter are:

- Charged particles loose energy in a medium depending on the particle velocity and charge, when they interact with atomic electrons, either exciting or ejecting them from their atoms.

- Coulomb interactions deflect the trajectory of slow and light particles in a medium. The cumulative change in path is called multiple scattering.

- Coulomb interactions with the nucleus of an atom leads to bremsstrahlung, where the incoming charged particle is deflected and hence decelerated enough to emit a high-energy photon.

- High energy photons can in the presence of a nucleus convert to an electron-positron pair. At lower energies Compton scattering and photo-electric emission dominates.

- High energy electrons and photons can start a cascade of pair-production and photon emission called an electromagnetic shower.

- Charged particles that move faster than the phase velocity \((c/n)\) in a medium cause polarisation of the atoms in the medium. When the atoms relax their polarisation state the emit coherent light forming a wavefront called Cherenkov radiation at a specific angle relative to the particle trajectory.

- Hadrons can interact strongly with nuclei creating new hadrons at lower energies. This can lead to a cascade of particles like for electrons, but with a somewhat longer interaction length \((\lambda_f)\).
• Long-lived particles can be identified by their speed in combination with their momentum.

• Momentum is measured as a function of the curvature of a charged particle in a magnetic field.

• Specific energy loss can provide the speed estimate \((\langle dE/dx \rangle \sim 1/\beta^2)\). The method gives a more stable result if multiple measurements are ‘truncated’ hence removing Landau long-tail contributions.

• A direct time-of-flight measurement also provides a speed measurement.
At its roots particle physics aims to study nature by observing how subatomic particles interact. Observing what comes out when a target is bombarded with a specific particle at a specific kinetic energy has lead to great revelations about how our universe is structured. These interactions can be caused by numerous means; naturally occurring radioactive processes and cosmic rays where some of the early sources. With the advent of particle accelerators a more systematic study has been possible, and quickly it was realised that the available kinetic energy in the collision meant opening up to new regions of physics, with new particles and new dynamics. Shooting a beam at a fixed target yields

$$E_{cm} = \left( m_1^2 + m_2^2 + 2E_{1,lab} m_2 \right)^{1/2}, \quad (5.1)$$

compared to,

$$E_{cm} = \left[ (E_1 + E_2)^2 - (\vec{p}_1 + \vec{p}_2)^2 \right]^{1/2} \quad (5.2)$$

if colliding two beams with each other. In Figure 5.1 we can see the difference.

It was thus a major breakthrough when the Intersecting Storage Rings (ISR) collided the first hadron beams in 1971 and allowed for nearly double the centre of mass energy. Ultimately the ISR reached a centre of mass energy of 63 GeV [64], which by (5.1) would have required a 2 TeV fixed-target accelerator. The ISR was not the first particle collider, but the use of hadrons made it possible to reach much higher collision energies and discover new heavier particles. The ISR also made it possible to upgrade the already running fixed-target SPS to a 540 GeV proton-anti-proton collider the SpS that allowed the UA1 and UA2 collaborations to discover the \(W^{\pm}\) and the \(Z^0\) bosons in 1983. A few years later in 1986 the American Tevatron collided its first protons with anti-protons that culminated with the discovery of the top quark in 1995 with a centre of mass energy of 1.96 TeV.

The use of hadrons instead of electrons creates a much more complicated collision environment due to the compositeness of the colliding particles. The reason why hadrons are collided at the high-energy accelerators is due to the emission of synchrotron radiation by accelerating charged particles. At the TeV scale the energy loss of electrons circulating a 27 km storage ring would be in the PeV range. An alternative would be linear colliders like the proposed International Linear Collider (ILC) that would be roughly 30 km long in order to reach 1 TeV. For discovering new physics at unknown
energies hadrons are more economical and that is why all 4 massive Standard Model particles discovered after 1980 have been found at hadron colliders.

5.1.1 Parton Distributions

Protons and other hadrons are not simply valence quarks in a brown paper bag, due to radiative production of quark-antiquark pairs by the gluons holding the valance quarks together an additional ‘sea’ of possible quarks are present inside the hadron.

By Deep Inelastic Scattering (DIS) information about the composition of hadrons have been obtained and turned into scale dependent parameterisations. Multiple collaborations produce these Parton Distribution Functions (PDF) that effectively assigns an interaction probability \( f_i^A(x, Q^2) \) to each parton \( i \) in the hadron of type \( A \) to partake in a given scattering process,

\[
\sigma_{A,B \rightarrow X} = \sum_{i,j} \int \int f_i^A(x_1, Q^2) \cdot f_j^B(x_2, Q^2) \cdot \hat{\sigma}_{i,j \rightarrow X} \, dx_1 \, dx_2. \tag{5.3}
\]

\( Q^2 \) is the overall energy scale defined by the incoming particles momentum. \( x \) is the momentum fraction. \( f_i^A(x, Q^2) \) is then the probability that the parton \( i \) at the energy scale \( Q^2 \) carries away a momentum fraction \( x \) of the hadron’s total momentum.

In Figure 5.2 the PDF of a proton at two different energy scales are shown. Notice that at high \( Q^2 \) the sea and gluon components have a high probability of carrying a significant fraction of the hadron momenta. This is in fact why colliding protons with protons is sensible as the valence quarks play a fairly small role and gluons are dominating, saving us from charge conservation.

5.2 The CERN Accelerator Complex

The accelerator facility CERN houses numerous experiments that all need accelerated particle beams. With advances in acceleration technology CERNs
portfolio of available beam types and energy has steadily increased. CERN mainly supply high energy and high intensity beams, at levels where national facilities have a hard time competing. Low energy at CERN starts at around 25 GeV which is the maximum energy of the Positron Synchrotron (PS). By injecting the PS beam into the SPS, a factor of 20 times the beam energy is created with a maximum energy of 450 GeV. Both storage rings deliver beams to fixed-target experiments, the PS serves the original CERN compound in Meyrin, Switzerland, where for instance the on-line isotope mass separator (ISOLDE) can produce nearly any isotope in the periodic system based on the PS beam. At the ‘North Area’ in Prévesin, France, beams are extracted from the SPS that can either be used at full energy or converted by targets to other particles such as high energy electrons and pions, that has been used as test-beams in the study of particle interactions in the LHC detectors.

The Large Hadron Collider (LHC) is also fed by this chain of accelerators. In Figure 5.3 the chain of accelerators leading to the LHC is sketched. Beams are extracted from the SPS at 450 GeV and injected into the LHC in each direction. Here they are ramped to a maximum energy of 7 TeV. Unlike the other accelerators, the LHC does not provide any fixed-target services it is currently dedicated to beam collisions at the four interaction points also illustrated in Figure 5.3.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Beam type</th>
<th>LEP</th>
<th>Tevatron</th>
<th>LHC</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beam energy [GeV]</td>
<td>$e^+, e^-$</td>
<td>$p^+, p^-$</td>
<td>$p^+, p^+$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beam energy [GeV]</td>
<td>45 − 104</td>
<td>900, 1000</td>
<td>3500, 4000, 6500, 7000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Circumference [km]</td>
<td>26.7</td>
<td>6.85</td>
<td>26.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Years of operation</td>
<td>1989-2000</td>
<td>1986-2011</td>
<td>2008-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luminosity [cm$^{-2}$s$^{-1}$]</td>
<td>$\sim 10^{10}$</td>
<td>$10^{12}$</td>
<td>$10^{33}, 10^{34}, 10^{34}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\sqrt{s}$ [GeV]</td>
<td>161 − 207</td>
<td>1960</td>
<td>7000, 8000, 13000, 14000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total statistics [pb$^{-1}$]</td>
<td>110,300,500</td>
<td>12000</td>
<td>5000, 20000, ?, ?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 5.1: Colliders

The LHC is placed in a 26.7 km tunnel constructed for the Large Electron-Positron collider (LEP). This tunnel was originally designed to facilitate a
future hadron collider as well as the lepton collider, yet during the planning of the LHC the option to keep the LEP inside the tunnel was abandoned. The diameter of the tunnel is 3.7 m which would leave little space for two superconducting rings, instead the LHC magnets are designed with two bores sharing the same cryostat and magnet assembly as can be seen from Figure 5.4.

Compared to LEP, the underground facility shown in Figure 5.5 has been expanded with two new caverns housing the ATLAS detector (Sec. 6) and the CMS detector. A comparison with LEP and the Tevatron can be found in Table 5.1.

In the years from 2010 until 2012 the LHC was in a commissioning phase (Table 5.2), where the beam energy was only half of the design energy. The decision to run at 3.5 TeV and later in 2012 at 4.0 TeV was due to a design error in the copper interconnects between the superconducting bending magnets. The error was disastrously discovered in 2008 shortly after the initial run, where a magnet quench led to explosive decompression of the confined helium destroying several magnets. During the following year, the sector was repaired and quench monitoring systems were installed. Running resumed in Nov. 2009 at $\sqrt{s} = 900$ GeV with impressive strides in luminosity and beam optimisation.

### 5.3 Luminosity

From Table 5.2 we see that the instantaneous luminosity of the LHC was around $L = 10^{33} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$ during the 2011 run, which is loosely calculated
by,

\[ L = f \frac{n_1 n_2}{4\pi \sigma_x \sigma_y} \]  

(5.4)

where \( f \) is the collision frequency of two bunches with \( n_1 \) and \( n_2 \) protons. \( \sigma_x \) and \( \sigma_y \) describe the gaussian beam width and height. It is common to measure the amount of accumulated statistics in integrated luminosity \( \int L \, dt \) with the unit of inverse-barn. fb\(^{-1}\) for instance, corresponds to \( 70 \times 10^{12} \) collisions. In terms of beam parameters (Table 5.2) the instantaneous luminosity can be expressed as

\[ L = \frac{N_b^2 n_b f_{rev} \gamma}{4\pi e_0 \beta^* F}, \]  

(5.5)

where \( N_b \) is the number of particles per bunch, \( n_b \) is the number of bunches per beam, \( f_{rev} \) the revolution frequency, \( \gamma \) is the relativistic gamma factor,
\( \varepsilon_n \) is the transverse beam emittance, \( \beta^\ast \) is the beta function at the collision point and \( F \) is a geometrical reduction factor due to the introduced crossing angle at the interaction points.

To give some idea about what that means in terms of production rate for common processes,

\[
\tau_{\text{process}} = L \sigma_{\text{process}},
\]

(5.6)

where \( \sigma_{\text{process}} \) is the cross section of the specific process and \( L \) is the instantaneous luminosity, we see from Figure 5.6 that for instance Z-bosons are produced at a rate around 40 Hz and nearly a million \( b \)-pairs are produced per second.

To estimate the accumulated number event produced we can calculate,

\[
N = \sigma_{\text{process}} \int L \, dt
\]

(5.7)

### 5.3.1 Pile-up

The high collision rate comes at a price, pile-up, multiple interactions happening at the same time is a serious issue at the LHC. With \( 10^{11} \) protons per bunch colliding in a tightly squeezed region around 9.1 collisions happened per bunch-crossing inside ATLAS in 2011. This overlap leaves a challenge to the reconstruction algorithms where finding the correct vertex for each secondary particle is crucial when estimating missing energy and invariant masses.
The LHC hosts four main experiments, one of these are ATLAS (A Toroidal LHC ApparatuS), a general purpose detector designed to study a wide spectrum of particle interactions at the full beam intensity of the collider. The LHC is sized to allow for the production of TeV scale objects at low cross sections. The ATLAS detector is designed with these processes in mind. It has in particular been designed to cover every possible Higgs mass scenario ranging from 114 GeV/$c^2$ to 1000 GeV/$c^2$. The coupling of the Higgs particle to every other SM particle means that the possible production and decay modes varies widely as a function of Higgs mass (Figure 6.1).

This wide range of possible dominant decay modes made it necessary to have good photon reconstruction if $m_H < 2m_Z$, good lepton reconstruction in particular of muons and electrons if $m_H > 130$ GeV/$c^2$, but also excellent jet and missing energy reconstruction if $m_H > 200$ GeV/$c^2$ where $WW$ and $ZZ$ decays would be the primary decay modes. Models predicting new physics was also part of the benchmarks for ATLAS design performance. Heavy gauge bosons $W'$ and $Z'$ with rest masses up to 6 TeV/$c^2$ can be produced at the LHC. The study of their leptonic decays requires high-resolution lepton measurements, charge identification and transverse momentum resolution in the multi $p_T \sim$ TeV/$c$ range. The breaking of the SM in $B_0^0 \rightarrow \mu \mu$ and other $b$-physics channels requires excellent primary and secondary vertex resolution, as does distinguishing one interesting interaction from the on average 23 simultaneous inelastic collisions that happens due to pile-up in ATLAS at every bunch-crossing. The search for MSSM Supersymmetry relies on missing transverse energy signatures from the weakly interacting LSP slipping away. This means that the calorimetry must have excellent hermeticity to estimate the total visible energy. Pile-up is not the only multiplicity challenge. ATLAS is also capable of reconstructing heavy ion collisions with thousands of charged particles being produced per collision. The intensity of the LHC collisions also puts requirements on radiation tolerance, fast readout times and high bandwidth data acquisition and fast trigger decisions.

This diverse set of challenges has lead to the construction of a detector-stack with multiple systems redundancy and design requirements found in Table 6.1.

A rendition of the final design is shown in Figure 6.2. The detector design is forward-backward symmetric around the interaction point (IP) and near-axial symmetric in acceptance around the beam-pipe. The general layout follows most general purpose detectors with the non-destructive tracking and vertex system close to the IP embedded in a solenoidal magnetic field, followed by an electromagnetic and hadronical calorimeter. The muon spec-
### Table 6.1: Performance goals for the ATLAS detector.

Muon performance at high-$p_T$ is quoted independent of the inner trackers and is the momentum resolution for muon segments alone, Ref [102].

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Detector component</th>
<th>Required resolution</th>
<th>$\eta$ coverage</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tracking</td>
<td>$\sigma_{p_T}/p_T = 0.05% p_T \oplus 1%$</td>
<td>$\pm 2.5$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EM calorimetry</td>
<td>$\sigma_E/E = 10% / \sqrt{E} \oplus 0.7%$</td>
<td>$\pm 3.2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hadronic calorimetry (jets)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>barrel and end-cap</td>
<td>$\sigma_E/E = 50% / \sqrt{E} \oplus 3%$</td>
<td>$\pm 3.2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forward</td>
<td>$\sigma_E/E = 100% / \sqrt{E} \oplus 10%$</td>
<td>$3.1 &lt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muon spectrometer</td>
<td>$\sigma_{p_T}/p_T = 10%$ at $p_T = 1$ TeV/$c$</td>
<td>$\pm 2.7$ $\pm 2.4$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The muon spectrometer envelopes the calorimeters and a toroidal magnetic field allows for charge and momentum reconstruction of muons with $p_T > 1$ TeV/$c$. The cylindrical design separates the detector stations into a barrel region and two end-cap regions. Tracking is available in the central region with $|\eta| < 2.5$ while calorimetry extents to $|\eta| < 4.9$. To allow for a consistent reference to activities in the detector we will define a general coordinate system and some of the frequently mentioned sizes.

#### 6.0.2 Coordinates

ATLAS is situated at Point-1 (Figure 5.5). A right-handed coordinate system can be placed with the origin at the middle of the detector (the nominal interaction point) the $z$-axis then points along the beam-pipe, the $x$-axis towards the centre of the LHC ring (north) and the $y$-axis points upwards (Figure 6.3). Due to the geometrical symmetries it is useful to define a spherical coordinate system as well, with the azimuthal angle $\phi$ in the transverse $x-y$ plane, and the polar angle $\theta$ with respect to the positive $z$-axis. Polar angle $\theta$ is...
usually expressed in terms of pseudorapidity

\[ \eta = -\ln \left( \tan \frac{\theta}{2} \right). \] (6.1)

In parton collisions the initial longitudinal momentum component is unknown due to compositeness of the parent hadrons. This restricts assumptions on energy and momentum conservation to the transverse plane, and common observables such as rapidity

\[ y = \frac{1}{2} \ln \frac{E + p_z}{E - p_z} \] (6.2)

are less used. For massless particles pseudorapidity is equivalent to rapidity. Differences in pseudorapidity are invariant under boosts along the z-axis making it easy to compare the relative distance between them

\[ \Delta R = \sqrt{\Delta \eta^2 + \Delta \phi^2} \] (6.3)

even if the longitudinal boost is unknown.

The lack of knowledge regarding the longitudinal momentum component makes it necessary to work in the transverse plane when requiring momentum conservation. We therefore introduce a set of transverse observables,

\[ p_T = \sqrt{p_x^2 + p_y^2} = p \sin \theta \leftrightarrow |p| = p_T \cosh \eta \] (6.4)

\[ E_T = \sqrt{m^2 + p_T^2} \] (6.5)

\[ E_T^{\text{miss}} = -\sum p_T. \] (6.6)

**6.1 The Magnet system**

To allow accurate momentum determination within the tracking volumes of ATLAS, four large super-conducting magnets are placed around the interaction region as can be seen in Figure 6.4. The system is comprised of a thin 2 T axial aligned solenoid magnet around the inner tracking region and three toroid magnet systems for the muon spectrometers - one for each end-cap and a central barrel magnet, their peak field strength is around 3.9 T.
6.1.1 Central solenoid magnet

The central solenoid is placed after the last tracking system and before the electromagnetic calorimeter. Due to its placement before the calorimeter, it has been an important design decision to bring down the material budget as much as possible. To minimise the material, the solenoid and the calorimeter share the same vacuum vessel, reducing the material budget due to the magnet to 0.66 radiation lengths. The magnet is 5.8 m long and has an inner diameter of 2.46 m.

6.1.2 The toroid magnets

The nearly iconic toroid magnets in ATLAS are shaped like eight race-track loops that each are 25.3 m in length and have an inner (outer) diameter of 9.4 m (20.1 m).

6.2 Tracking system

The inner tracking system in ATLAS is comprised of three distinct subsystems, a silicon pixel tracker (PIX), a silicon strip detector (SCT) and a straw-based transition radiation detector (TRT). The trackers have been designed to endure the high intensity of the LHC, with radiation hard designs and fast readout technology. The tracking system is designed to allow for precise primary and secondary vertex estimation, excellent momentum resolution, charge determination and in case of the TRT also electron identification by transition radiation (Sec. 4.1.7). The overall dimensions of the system are shown in Figure 6.5.
6.2.1 Silicon pixel detector

The silicon pixel detector consists of a barrel region ($|\eta| < 1.7$) with three concentric layers around the IP and 2x3 end-cap layers covering the region $2.5 > |\eta| > 1.7$. The combined pixel layers extends radially from 5.05 to 14.96 cm and a length of 130 cm. The detector layers consist of 1744 identical sensor modules with dimensions $19 \times 63 \text{ mm}^2$. Each module has 46080 active pixels with a nominal pixel size of $50 \times 400 \mu\text{m}^2$ and a thickness of 250 $\mu\text{m}$. The chips are designed to be very resilient to radiation while maintaining good charge collection efficiency over long exposure times. The general principle of a semiconductor detector is that when a charged particle traverses a pixel area ionisation produces electron-hole pairs which can be collected as a signal when an electric field is applied. The intrinsic accuracy of the pixel layers are 10 $\mu\text{m}$ in $xy-\phi$ and 115 $\mu\text{m}$ in the $z$-direction. The average number of Pixel hits for a track within the acceptance is 3. Radiation tolerance is achieved by constructing the sensor on an n-bulk with n+ implants on the read-out side and p+ on the back-side forming a p-n junction [101]. At some point radiation will invert the n-bulk and the sensor will function as a p-type semiconductor. The pixel detectors basically forms segmented solid-state ionisation chambers where each pixel is defined by they n-type implants on the readout side with each that have the pixel dimensions.

A central concept in this design is ‘bump-bonding’ where direct connections between each pixel and its corresponding readout electronic is provided by small solder point spaced with a 50 $\mu\text{m}$ pitch (Figure 6.7).

6.2.2 The semiconductor tracker

The SCT is a silicon strip detector which consists of four layers in the barrel region and nine layers in each end-cap. The radial dimensions spans 29.9 to 56.0 cm. And the total length of the detector is 272 cm. To give a space-point each module have two strip sensors glued together at a slight angle (40 mrad) relative to one another.

The average strip pitch is 80 $\mu\text{m}$, two sensors are daisy chained in such a way that each effective strip is $\sim 12$ cm in length. The intrinsic resolution of the SCT is 17 $\mu\text{m}$ in the $xy-\phi$ direction and 580 $\mu\text{m}$ in $z$. The average number of SCT space-points for a track within the $|\eta| < 2.5$ acceptance is 8.
6.2.3 Transition radiation tracker

The Transition Radiation Tracker (TRT) is a large straw-drift chamber situated beyond the SCT. It consists of 294304 drift tubes each 2 mm in radius. These tubes are configured in horizontal groupings in the barrel region and circular planes in the end-cap regions (see Figure 6.5). The overall dimensions spans a radius between 55.4 and 108.2 cm for the barrel and 61.5 to 110.6 cm for the end-caps.

The barrel is 156 cm long and each end-cap is 191.7 cm in length. The single straw position resolution is 130 µm and a track is on average associated with 30 TRT measurements. The acceptance of the TRT is slightly smaller than the other two tracking systems only reaching $|\eta| < 2.0$.

Each straw is a thin drift chamber made by winding two 35 µm films around a hot mandrel fusing them into a straw. Each film is composed of 25 µm polyimide coated with 0.2 µm aluminium cathode on one side which is protected by a 5 µm layer of graphite-polyimide. The other side of the film is coated by a 5 µm layer of polyurethane layer that when heated melts the two film together around the mandrel. Each straw is further stabilised by carbon fibres wound around the tube. At the centre of each straw is an anode made by a 31 µm diameter tungsten wire coated by 0.6 µm gold. The attenuation length of a signal on the wire is $\sim 4$ m, and the propagation time is $\sim 4$ nm/m. The barrel straws are 144 cm in length but read out in each end, making the signal propagation length 71.2 cm. The endcap straws are 37 cm long each.

The straws are filled with a gas mixture comprised of 70% Xe, 27% CO$_2$ and 3% O$_2$. The gas mixture is optimised for the time requirements imposed by the bunch crossing rates, with a maximum electron collection time of $\sim 48$ ns. The Xenon component also serves as X-ray absorber for photons emitted as transition radiation.

The straws are embedded in a matrix of thin polypropylene fibres that serves as transition radiators, that when crossed by a highly boosted particle will cause additional X-ray emission as described in Section 4.1.7. This feature of the TRT allows for electron-pion separation independent of the calorimeter systems as is illustrated in Figure 6.10 for the barrel region.

Due to the high number of channels and relatively long signal time, a full ADC readout is not feasible. Instead each straw readout is digitalised as a 24
Figure 6.11: Comparison of the intrinsic hit resolution (in the $xy-\phi$-plane) in each tracker in the barrel region with the track sagitta ($s$) caused by a 2 T solenoid magnetic field. The grey surface illustrates the sagitta for a track bending in the magnetic field. The two additional axes are transverse momentum of the particle ($p_T$) and distance from the interaction point ($L$) respectively. The red horizontal planes are each detector’s intrinsic resolution. When the red planes are visible it means that the intrinsic resolution of each detector is coarser than the sagitta bending distance at the specific length. A 100 GeV/c track has a sagitta around 0.75 mm at the distance of the TRT. A track fit relies on the combination of all detectors, but it is worth noting that the individual detector resolution scales well with the sagitta. We also see that the primary function of the pixel detector is to provide directional and positional information whereas the SCT and the TRT are far enough from the IP to provide momentum and charge determination.

6.2.4 Momentum resolution

As mentioned in the previous section, the magnetic field in the tracking region is around 2 T, which for hard tracks (TeV-range) leaves a very small sagitta,

$$R = \frac{p_T}{0.3B} \quad (6.7)$$
$$s = R(1 - \cos(L/R)) \quad (6.8)$$
$$s \sim 75 \times 10^{-6} \text{ m} \mid (p_T = 1 \text{ TeV/c}, B = 2 \text{ T}) \quad (6.9)$$

On Figure 6.11 the sagitta at each detector plane is drawn with red planes illustrating the individual detector resolution. It is clear from the figure that all three sub-systems must work in unison to achieve decent momentum resolution in our region of interest around the TeV.

6.3 Calorimeters

The calorimeter systems in ATLAS are presented in Figure 6.12. All the systems are sampling based with independent absorber and active material. The total coverage is $|\eta| < 4.9$ and the total thickness is on average $11\lambda$ interaction lengths for hadronic showers and more than $22X_0$ radiation lengths for...
electromagnetic showers. In total the calorimeter system provide good coverage both for electromagnetic and hadronic showers, limiting punch through to the muon spectrometer situated further away from the IP.

6.3.1 Electromagnetic calorimeters

The Electromagnetic calorimeters is a Lead-LAr detector where lead plates act as absorbers, liquid argon as active medium and electrodes made of kapton. The geometry of the electrodes are shaped as accordions allowing a \( \phi \) symmetrical stacking that completely encloses the tracker along the azimuthal. The barrel region is highly granular with \( \Delta \eta \) down to 0.02518 in the first radial layer and \( \Delta \eta \leq 0.015 \) for the second layer, to allow good electron and photon reconstruction with excellent directional pointing of photons. Radially it is comprised of four layers including a 1.1 cm presampler that compensates for energy loss in the tracking volume.

6.3.2 Hadronic calorimeters

Outside the electromagnetic calorimeter at \( |\eta| < 1.7 \) is the hadronic barrel calorimeter. It is a steel-absorber plastic-scintillator sampling calorimeter divided into a central \((|\eta| < 1.0)\) and two extended \(0.7 < |\eta| < 1.7\) barrels. The calorimeters extents radially from 2.28 m to 4.25 m and are divided into 64 modules in the azimuthal plane. It is segmented into three layers in depth with 1.5, 4.1 and 1.8 \( \lambda \) in the central barrel, and 1.5, 4.1 and 1.8 \( \lambda \) in the extended barrels. The scintillating tiles are read out by two independent PMTs one at high and one at low gain. The readouts are grouped into pseudo-projective blocks as we will see later in Section 8.
6.3.3 Hadronic end-cap calorimeter

The hadronic end-cap calorimeters (HEC) are based on LAr like the EM Calorimeter but with copper absorbers instead of lead. It extends from $|\eta| = 1.5$ to $|\eta| = 3.2$ overlapping with both the extended barrel calorimeter and the LAr forward calorimeter.

6.3.4 LAr forward calorimeter

At the extreme the LAr forward calorimeter (FCal) extents all the way to $|\eta| = 4.9$. It is three modules in depth with a total interaction depth of 10 $\lambda$. The first module is made with copper absorber mainly for EM showering while the last two are made with tungsten to provide high density for hadronic showers.

6.4 Muon system

The Muon Spectrometer (MS) is situated around the calorimeter volumes and can in many ways act independently of the rest of the detector. Large superconducting air-toroid magnets provides deflection for momentum measurements independent of the inner detector. The MS is comprised of both trigger and tracking detectors. The main design goal for the MS is a stand-alone transverse momentum resolution of 10% for 1 TeV/$c$ tracks. With the magnetic field strength described in Sec. 6.1 the sagitta (6.8) is around 500 $\mu$m, requiring a measurement resolution around 50 $\mu$m. Muons with momenta less than $\sim 3$ GeV/$c$ stops in the calorimeter but otherwise the MS is designed to allow momentum and charge determination for muons in the range $3 - 3000$ GeV/$c$. The MS is structured as three concentrical cylindrical layers around the barrel region ($|\eta| < 2.0$) with radii 5 m, 7.5 m and 10 m, which approximately is also the radial extremes of the barrel toroid magnets. In the end-cap regions two large wheels are serviced by their own end-cap toroid magnets. The total acceptance is $|\eta| < 2.7$ for tracking and $|\eta| < 2.4$ for muon triggering. Four types of detectors are utilised in the MS, two precision tracking systems for sagitta measurements and two fast trigger systems that also provides a secondary coordinate in the non-bending plane for tracking. The main precision detectors are Monitored Drift Tubes (MDT) which covers $|\eta| < 2.7$ except at the innermost plane where radiation hardness is an issue for the drift tubes and Multi-Wire Proportional chambers (MWPC) are used instead. These MWPCs are specifically Cathode Strip Chambers (CSC) with the cathodes segmented into strips to provide a full 3D space point. The trigger system relies on two different technologies: in the barrel region Resistive Plate Chambers (RPCs) are used and in the end-cap region Thin Gap Chambers (TGCs). The MS envelopes 16000 m$^3$ and spans the full ATLAS length of nearly 40 m. Precision measurements with 50 $\mu$m resolution in such a large structure requires perfect alignment, and both gravitational fatigue and thermal effects significantly displaces the sensitive detectors. Alignment is done both optically and with high-$pT$ tracks.
6.4.1 Monitored Drift Tubes

The Monitored drift tube chambers are comprised of $2 \times 3$ layers of drift tubes. Each layer consists of between 16 and 72 tubes that are 3 cm in diameter. The chambers length along the $z$-direction is then $3 \text{ cm} \times n_{\text{tubes}}$, where the width along the $\phi$ direction can be between 2 and 5 m.

The individual straws are similar to the TRT straws but scaled in size. The tubes themselves are made of aluminium with a 50 $\mu$m gold-plated tungsten-rhenium wire as anode. The gas in the tube is a mixture of 93% argon, 7% $\text{CO}_2$ and trace amounts of water. The pressure is kept at 3 bar and with a nominal wire potential at 3080 V the maximum drift time is $\sim 700$ ns. The average tube resolution is 80 $\mu$m and a full chamber yields a point resolution of 35 $\mu$m. Combining hits from three MDT stations gives a resolution on the sagitta of $\Delta s = 45 \, \mu m$ corresponding to a momentum resolution of

$$\frac{\Delta p}{p} = \frac{\Delta s p}{500 \, \mu m}$$

(6.10)

with $p$ in units of $\text{TeV}$.

6.4.2 Cathode Strip Chambers

Beyond $|\eta| > 2$ the operational limit of the MDTs are reached (with rates in excess of $150 \text{Hz/cm}^2$). This region corresponds to the first muon layer in the end-cap region. Here MDTs are replaced with Cathode Strip Chambers which are segmented MWPC that are capable of handling counting rates up to 1kHz/cm$^2$, enough to cover up to $|\eta| < 2.7$. A CSC works on the same principle as a multi wire proportional chamber but the cathode is segmented into strips that gives positional information on the orthogonal axes relative to the anode wires.

The CSCs consists of two wheels with eight small and eight large chambers positioned as shown in Figure 6.16. Each chamber contains four CSC planes. The anode wires are radially aligned and one set of cathodes orthogonal to the anodes provide one precision coordinate. Another set of cathodes parallel to the anodes provide a low resolution transverse coordinate. In the bending plane the per-plane resolution is $60 \, \mu m$ but $5 \, \text{mm}$ in the non-bending plane.
plane. Apart from good tracking in the intense environment 7 m away from the IP and 90 cm from the beam-line, the CSC also provides a 7ns time resolution per plane. The CSCs are filled with an Argon/CO$_2$ as the MDTs and operates at a potential of 1900 V.

6.4.3 Resistive Plate Chambers

The RPCs are designed to provide a fast but spatially coarse trigger response for the MS. The RPC stations consist of two units each with two layers one for each direction ($\eta, \phi$). The positioning of the stations seen in Figure 6.17 allows for effective triggering on both low-$p_T$ (6 – 9 GeV/$c$) and high-$p_T$ (9 – 35 GeV/$c$) tracks. The two layers RPC1 and RPC2 sitting close together nearest the IP allows for efficient identification of low-$p_T$ tracks while the addition of the longer lever-arm out to RPC3 provides a high-$p_T$ trigger signal when combined with one or two closer stations. The RPCs are constructed by spacing two resistive plates by a 2 mm gas filled volume. The gas is a mixture of C$_2$H$_2$F$_2$/Iso – C$_3$H$_{10}$/SF$_6$. The RPC are operated in avalanche mode with a field gradient of 4.9 kV/mm which provides rate-independent time resolution and higher restitution rates compared with streamer operation. The RPCs are read out capacitively by metallic strips glued to the outer surfaces of the resistive plates. The strips are around 3 cm wide separated by a 2mm gap to provide positional information.
6.4.4 Thin gap chambers

TGCs serve as trigger planes in the end-cap regions. They also provide the end-cap MDTs with an azimuthal component to compliment the radial component measured by the drift chambers. The TGCs are basically MWPCs where the wire spacing is larger than the cathode-wire distance. This allows for a quasi-saturated operation with a voltage of 2.9 kV and a gas mixture of CO\textsubscript{2} and n-pentane which makes for very fast operation and a time resolution around 4ns. The TGC is planar like the CSC with segmented anodes and cathodes. The spatial resolution is 2 – 6mm in the \( xy \)-plane and 3 – 7mm in the \( \phi \)-plane.

6.5 Speed estimation in ATLAS

All systems in ATLAS are capable of measuring particle speeds (\( \beta = v/c \)) in Table 6.2 the systems are listed with references to studies of the specific method. In the 2011 search for coloured long-lived particles presented in Chapter 9 a combination of estimators are utilised.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sub detector</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pixel Tracker</td>
<td>( dE/dx )</td>
<td>[12]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SCT</td>
<td>( dE/dx )</td>
<td>[108]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRT</td>
<td>Transition radiation</td>
<td>[104]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRT</td>
<td>( dE/dx )</td>
<td>[137]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRT</td>
<td>Time-of-Flight</td>
<td>not published</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calorimeters</td>
<td>Time-of-Flight</td>
<td>[69]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calorimeters</td>
<td>( dE/dx )</td>
<td>[63]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muon Spectrometer</td>
<td>Time-of-Flight</td>
<td>[27]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muon Spectrometer</td>
<td>( dE/dx )</td>
<td>[13]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Specifically the Pixel tracker which will be further introduced as a \( \beta\gamma \)-estimator in Chapter 7 is used due to both high acceptance and \( \beta \) resolution. The TRT and the SCT have been found capable of estimating \( dE/dx \) but at relatively modest resolutions due to the readout format. The SCT provides three bits to describe Time-over-Threshold (ToT) which allows for a rudimentary \( dE/dx \) estimate. The TRT provides more measurements per track than the SCT and more ToT bits (including High-Threshold bits enabled if transition radiation is observed) but similarly to the SCT suffers from the lack of full ADC readout. Compared to the other systems in ATLAS they where found not to provide a significant improvement in our search and where left for cross checks. The calorimeters provides both \( dE/dx \) and ToF based \( \beta \) estimation for penetrating particles. The latter method which is presented and expanded in Chapter 8 was also applied in the 2011 search. The muon spectrometer with its fast trigger stations and precision drift tubes is capable of measuring ToF and \( dE/dx \) for charged particles that survives to these outer systems within the readout window. In our 2011 search any R-Hadron candidates found to match a muon track will be ascribed a combined \( \beta \) estimate based on calorimeter and MS measurements if found to be compatible (Sec. 9.4.1).
Searches for long-lived particles with ATLAS at the LHC
The pixel detector in ATLAS is capable of measuring the energy deposited by a charged track traversing its pixels. This chapter describes the development of a mass/βγ estimator that utilises this possibility. The method described there differs from the one used in our 2011 analysis and is presented as a stand-alone study exploring a new and improved avenue in the development of empirical parameterisations called genetic algebraic regression.

7.1 dE/dx from the pixel detector

Charged particles at even low momentum are expected to pass through the thin pixel detectors in ATLAS leaving behind energy in the form of specific energy loss following a Landau distribution (4.16) with a most-probable-value set by the Vavilov equation (4.15). For highly relativistic particles the density correction in the Vavilov equation reaches a ‘Fermi plateau’ and flattens to a constant energy loss. Figure 7.1 shows the difference between a Bethe-Bloch mean energy loss and the MPV energy loss for the Vavilov formula. This moderation in energy loss at high-βγ allow us to distinguish between the low-βγ rise and this ‘extended’ MIP-region stretching until electron-pair production sets in at βγ ∼ 1000.

If we can measure ⟨dE/dx⟩ it will allow us to determine βγ by inverting (4.14). Combining the βγ-estimate with the particles momentum and we
have a mass estimate. First we have to estimate the actual charge deposited in the detector for a given track.

### 7.1.1 Pixel charge estimation

In the pixel sensors (Figure 7.2) each pixel diode is connected to a readout cell on the front-end board that contains an analogue charge-sensitive preamplifier. The preamp is designed to emit a discriminator pulse with a pulse width proportional with the input charge. This signal called Time-Over-Threshold (ToT) is measured by counting the number of cycles of a 40 MHz master clock passing for the duration of the emitted pulse. The number of cycles is then digitised into two 8-bit timestamps one called the Leading-Edge (LE) and the other the Trailing Edge (TE). The threshold is adjustable but has been set to 3.5\(ke\). The number of liberated electrons from a MIP particle traversing the 250 \(\mu m\) silicon is roughly

\[
N_e = \left\langle \frac{dE}{dx} \right\rangle x_{\text{thickness}} / I_{\text{Si}} = 106 \text{ KeV} / 3.6 \text{ eV} \approx 29\text{ke} \quad (7.1)
\]

based on (4.14). The MPV of electrons assuming a Landau distribution is closer to 20\(ke\) for a MIP moving with a normal incidence to the sensor plane. This is equivalent to a MIP giving an ADC value of 30. At 8 bit resolution this gives a maximum readout of 255 corresponding to \(\sim 8.5\) MIPs or 170\(ke\). This upper limit on the dynamic range consequently means that energy deposited by highly ionising particles with \(dE/dx > 8.5\) MIP will be discarded and not read out, not even an overflow signal is saved.

In Figure 7.3 the linear relationship between ToT and injected charge is shown. The overall readout ranges are listed in table 7.1.

![Figure 7.2: A pixel sensor with its three component layers exposed.](image)

![Figure 7.3: Relationship between time-over-threshold and charge deposition for the pixel detector.](image)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 7.1: Data ranges for charge readout on individual pixel diodes.</th>
<th>Charge [ke]</th>
<th>ADC value [counts]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(\Delta Q): 0.66ke</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minimum charge</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minimum ionising particle</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ATLAS Preliminary
The charge response is regularly calibrated and kept normalised across the pixel diodes to within 2% variation, making it reasonable to combine multiple measurements in a combined $\langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle$ for all hits along a track in the pixel detector.

### 7.1.2 Truncated $dE/dx$ estimation

A charged particle intersecting a pixel sensor is rarely confined to a single pixel and clusters of pixel hits are produced by grouping charge depositions in the vicinity of a track into a pixel cluster.

The combined charge in a pixel cluster can be biased due to the limited dynamic range and the charge threshold described in the earlier section but also due to variations in the physical regions on the silicon die. To keep the $dE/dx$ estimator relatively simple any complicated regions are discarded. In practice outliers close to the sensor edge and ‘ganged’ pixels are discarded. Ganged pixels are pixel diodes placed between two readout chips in a region where bump-bonding is impossible. Instead they share a readout channel with pixels under the front-end board by local connections shown in Figure 7.4 as black lines.

![Pixel layout. The white points are bump bonding connectors. The black lines illustrate how pixels are ganged together to allow readout of the pixels outside the covered region of the readout chips [101.]](image)

A veto is done by excluding the region where the track trajectory intersects the non-greyed region in the subfigure in Figure 7.5. For each cluster that passes these quality requirements the specific energy loss is calculated

$$\langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle = \frac{Q W \cos \alpha}{e \rho d} \quad (7.2)$$

Here $Q$ is the cluster charge, $W = 3.68 \pm 0.2 eV/$pair is the energy required to create a e-h pair in silicon, $d = 250 \, \mu m$ is the thickness of the sensor and $\cos \alpha$ is the incident angle of the track relative to the sensor surface. Shallow tracks with $\cos \alpha < 0.16$ are discarded as the relation no longer holds (they make up 0.4% of associated clusters).

The deposited charge in a single pixel follows a Landau distribution (see Figure 4.6). Multiple measurements allow us to calculate a mean value that asymptotically is related to (4.14). With only 3 layer hits on average a single high energy deposit can throw off the mean value enough to make $\beta \gamma$
estimation impossible. To alleviate this problem, the truncated mean method introduced in section 4.3.2 is used. To give a general overview the algorithm for estimating the truncated pixel-dE/dx is shown in Figure 7.5.

Figure 7.5: Truncated dE/dx estimate from ATLAS Pixel detector

```
1: function getPixelDedx(track)  >> Total measurements used
2:     q_total ← 0
3:     nHits ← 0
4:     q_0 ← null  >> Empty vector for charges
5:      for all pixel surfaces along the track trajectory do
6:         pix_cluster ← Pixel cluster intersected by track on surface
7:         locx ← location of pix_cluster on sensor x-axis
8:         locy ← location of pix_cluster on sensor y-axis
9:         if {locx, locy} inside orange regions in

   locy [mm]
   locx [mm]
   -30 300
   0 8

   then
10:            cos α ← \( \vec{p}_\text{trk} \cdot \hat{n}_{\text{surface}} \)  >> Track angle wrt. surface
11:            if |cos α| < 0.16 then continue with next surface
12:            end if
13:            q ← TotalCharge(pix_cluster) \times \cos α
14:            q_total ← q_total + q
15:            q_{\mu+1} ← q
16:            nHits ← nHits + 1
17:      end for
18:      if nHits ≥ 1 then
19:            q_{\text{avg}} ← \frac{q_{\text{total}}}{n_{\text{Hits}}}  >> No truncation if only 1 hit.
20:            q_{\text{avg}} ← 0
21:            else if nHits < 5 then  >> Truncate the largest value if nHits < 5.
22:                q_{\text{total}} ← q_{\text{total}} - q_{\text{Hits-1}}
23:                q_{\text{avg}} ← q_{\text{total}} / (n_{\text{Hits}} - 1)
24:            else  >> If more than 5 hits, truncate at the second-largest.
25:                q_{\text{total}} ← q_{\text{total}} - q_{\text{Hits-1}}
26:                q_{\text{total}} ← q_{\text{total}} - q_{\text{Hits-2}}
27:                q_{\text{avg}} ← q_{\text{total}} / (n_{\text{Hits}} - 2)
28:            end if
29:            end if
30:      return q_{\text{avg}} \times \frac{I_{\text{Si}}}{(p_{\text{Si}} \rho_{\text{Si}} d)}  >> Scale to MeV g\(^{-1}\) cm\(^2\).
31:  end function
```

The \( \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle \) algorithm requires access to pixel clusters. These are in general not stored after reconstruction in upstream data formats. Because of that the estimator runs as part of official ATLAS reconstruction and this study has been done on this information produced in central reconstruction on Monte Carlo samples.

In Figure 7.6a the ATLAS dE/dx ‘propaganda plot’ is shown as a function of track momentum for low-\( p \) Standard Model particles. From the figure we can see that there is promising separation between each particle type, but more importantly between the MIP band and low-\( \beta \gamma \) particles. Compatibility between Monte Carlo simulation and data is also fairly good. In Figure 7.6b simulated minimum bias events (\( p > 3 \) GeV/c) are compared with recorded events from 2010. The peak in Figure 7.6b is clearly defined with only a slight asymmetric tail but otherwise the long Landau tail is removed by truncation.
7.1.3 dE/dx from LLPs in ATLAS

Before we continue developing the mass estimator we shall first take a quick look at how our signal samples behave to understand the situation. In Figure 7.7 muons with $\beta \gamma \gg 4$ show clear separation from the slower R-Hadrons with $\beta \gamma < 4$.

Figure 7.8 illustrates how energy deposition of slow particles follows (4.14), (4.15) and (4.16). The figure is the result of plotting the dE/dx estimate from the track reconstruction against the particles speed. The histogram is filled by multiple slepton (\tilde{\tau}) samples with a variety masses but as all particles with charge $|q| = 1$ follows this exact curve it only serves to increase the statistics. The dripping peak at $\beta \gamma \sim 0.2$ is due to the limited dynamic range of the ADC. It can be seen from Figure 7.8 that the distribution flattens out at the MIP minimum around $\beta \gamma \sim 2.5$. 

(a) dE/dx from 2010 Minimum bias runs

(b) Truncated dE/dx
7.1.4 Number of good \( dE/dx \) hits dependence

The \( dE/dx \) estimate depends on the number of good pixel clusters available (Table 7.2) which again depends on whether the track crosses the barrel, the end-cap region or both. This point is illustrated in Figure 7.9 where the number of pixel clusters per \( dE/dx \) is plotted as a function of pseudorapidity. After \(|\eta| > 2\) the barrel overlaps with the end-cap region.

Table 7.2: \( dE/dx \) truncation factors and the effect on the mean value of MIPs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number of clusters</th>
<th>number excluded</th>
<th>( \langle dE/dx \rangle ) [MeV g(^{-1}) cm(^2)]</th>
<th>( \sigma ) [MeV g(^{-1}) cm(^2)]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1.354 ± 0.003</td>
<td>0.239 ± 0.003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1.212 ± 0.001</td>
<td>0.185 ± 0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.255 ± 0.000</td>
<td>0.163 ± 0.000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.287 ± 0.001</td>
<td>0.153 ± 0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1.226 ± 0.001</td>
<td>0.129 ± 0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1.250 ± 0.002</td>
<td>0.119 ± 0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1.252 ± 0.006</td>
<td>0.120 ± 0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1.259 ± 0.057</td>
<td>0.175 ± 0.088</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
7.2 Pseudorapidity correction

Figure 7.10 illustrates the phase-space variation of muons from a $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ MC sample. We clearly see the expected dependence on boost in pseudorapidity. To verify whether the detector geometry has any influence on the average $dE/dx$ we shall make sure that any variation in $|\eta|$ is not simply due to $\beta\gamma$ variation in our MIP sample.

Figure 7.10: Phase-space of muons from $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ simulations.

Figure 7.11 show $dE/dx(\beta\gamma)$ of the $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ sample. From the figure a slight rise is noticeable but the sample has already reached the Fermi plateau if we look at the dashed black line representing the high-$\beta\gamma$ limit of the Vavilov equation

$$\Delta_p \xrightarrow{\xi}{\beta\gamma \gtrsim 100} \left[ \ln \frac{2mc^2\xi}{(\hbar\omega_p)^2} + j \right]$$

(7.3)

Figure 7.11: $dE/dx$ of muons from $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ simulations.

1 where $\xi$, $j$ are defined together with the full Vavilov equation in section 4.1.2. $\hbar\omega_p$ is the plasma energy replacing the mean excitation energy $I$ at high velocities.

The variation in the sample is then more likely caused by the phase-space...
“pushing” the sample out into a non-linear region of the detector rather than an expected increase in $dE/dx$ due to added speed.

Figure 7.12 gives us a further clue. Here each point in $\{\beta \gamma, |\eta|\}$-space is the mean $dE/dx$ in that particular point. The yellow band of increased $dE/dx$ in $1.5 < |\eta| < 2.0$ is independent of $\beta \gamma$ and likely a detector effect we can correct.

To make the variations clear we can use the difference between the estimate and (4.15),

$$\delta(dE/dx) = \frac{dE/dx_{\text{est}} - dE/dx_{\text{Vavilov}}}{dE/dx_{\text{Vavilov}}},$$

(7.4)

to show which regions vary from the nominal.

In Figure 7.13 the deviation from theory is shown, and as we expected from Figure 7.12 the geometry is attributable to a 10% variation.
7.2.1 Correction

The usual way of finding an equation that matches data is either reverting to fundamental principles and geometry or guessing the equation based on trial-and-error and experience. In this case I knew the underlying equation but not the accumulated responses from ATLAS due to geometry, electronics and reconstruction. Instead of guessing, I decided to use Eureqa [86] a computer program that based on genetic algorithms fits a symbolic expression to many-dimensional data. Eureqa works by letting the user specify basic mathematical building blocks and accompanying ‘complexity weights’ for instance $+1, \times 2, \text{Gauss}(x), 10$ and so on. When started the program combines these building blocks and fits the dataset with the combination. Based on the fit Eureqa does Pareto optimisation on the complexity of the expression and the fit quality letting expressions evolve that are both simple and precise. Genetic algorithms emulates the biological process of evolution by mating, mutating and terminating expressions. As the method relies on stochastic processes one can be lucky and find a good expression within the first few minutes on a single system but usually the result especially for complicated datasets with large non-linear variations takes time to converge. The input for the Eureqa run was monte carlo simulated muons with $\beta \gamma > 50$, which we expect to be flat in $\eta$ with an average value close to the MIP value.

A few results from the search is listed in Table 7.3.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Size</th>
<th>Fitness</th>
<th>Equation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.0187</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.218 + 0.097\sin(0.468\eta^2)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>0.0186</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.257 + 0.059\sin(0.665\eta^2 - 0.665)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.0185</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.229 + 0.115\sin(\eta) - 0.065</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>0.0184</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.229 + 0.112\sin(\eta - 0.0321) - 0.062</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>0.0184</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.229 + 0.112\sin(\eta - 0.0270) - 0.063</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.0197</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.276 - 0.047\cos(\eta^2)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>0.0265</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = (3.617 +</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.0364</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.264$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.0362</td>
<td>$\frac{dE}{dx}(\eta) = 1.263 + 0.002</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.3: Search results for an expression fitting $dE/dx=f(\eta)$ Coefficients are truncated for visibility. Execution time: 8 hours on 40 CPU cores, resulting in $5.21 \times 10^{11}$ evaluations.

All the results in Table 7.3 holds similar compatibility with the dataset, so I chose the first function on the list. Rewriting to subtract the variation gives a corrected $dE/dx$,

$$dE/dx(\eta)_{\text{corr}} = dE/dx_{\text{est}} - 0.09676\sin(0.4675\eta^2). \quad (7.5)$$

Applying (7.5) to the $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ sample yields the result shown in Figure 7.14 where the plot to the left is how the sample differed from (4.15) before the correction and the right plot shows the corrected distribution.

7.3 Mass estimation

To create a mass estimate we must find an expression $\beta \gamma (\langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle)$ that follows the low-$\beta \gamma$ rise but stops when the MIP minimum is reached.

The quality of a statistical estimator can be summarised by the following qualities [62]:
The estimator must be consistent and converge towards the true value.

- Unbiased.

- Have the least amount of variance.

- Retain maximum information.

- Be as simple as possible.

- Computable.

- User-friendly.

The aim is thus to create an estimator that is precise, unbiased analytically invertible and relatively uncomplicated. The natural parameterisation is either Bethe-Bloch or the Vavilov equation simplified and fitted to data. The problem with these equations is that they lack the convolution of ATLAS detector and DAQ response and contain non-invertible parts. Instead of trying to make them fit an empirical distribution not well-described in the first place (see [63, 12] for attempts) we will apply another method to arrive at a more precise expression.

- Generate a $dE/dx(\beta \gamma)$ histogram (i.e. Figure 7.8).

- Slice the histogram along the $\beta \gamma$-axis.

- Fit each individual slice with a gaussian shape to extract the mean value and spread of $dE/dx$.

- Create a dataset with $\{\beta \gamma, dE/dx, \sigma_{dE/dx}\}$ in the range $1 < \beta \gamma < 6$ to capture both the rise and enough of the MIP band to allow the fit a well defined asymptote towards high-$\beta \gamma$.

- Fit the dataset with Eureqa, a machine learning tool that generates an algebraic formula based on symbolic regression.

7.3.1 Symbolic regression fit

The primary motivation for this study is the estimation of masses of new massive long-lived particles. Because $dE/dx$ is dependent on $\beta \gamma$ for slow
particles (section 4.1.2) a mass can be estimated by combination with an
independent momentum measurement.

\[ m = \frac{p}{\beta \gamma} \]  

(7.6)

The Bethe–Bloch formula describes this relationship for various materials,
but due to the complexity of the ATLAS detector it is impractical to analyti-
cally estimate the relation. Instead it is possible to find a parametrisation by
fitting low momentum Standard Model data where protons, kaons and pions
give distinct bands for momenta lower than 1 GeV/c.

In 2011 the default track reconstruction skipped tracks with momenta be-
low 1 GeV/c, requiring custom performance data files for this study. To
illustrate the method I have performed the fit on simulated events. The input
is SUSY \( \tilde{\tau} \) with varying masses\(^2\).

Selection The input data has been selected by requiring an inner detector
reconstructed track, at least two hits in the pixel detector, zero shared pixel
clusters between tracks, isolation from tracks and jets \( \sqrt{\Delta \eta^2 + \Delta \phi^2} > 0.3 \).

In order to estimate the \( \beta \gamma \) value all tracks are matched to ‘truth’ information
from the event generation step.

Each track matching the above criteria is saved in a 2D histogram with the
following geometry: x-axis: 500 bins between 0.1 and 10 \( \beta \gamma \), y-axis: 500
bins between 0 and 20 dE/dx.

To estimate the mean dE/dx value as a function of \( \beta \gamma \) the 2D histogram
is sliced by projecting along the y-axis. Each slice is fitted with a Gaussian
function and the resulting mean value with statistical errors saved in a 1D
histogram. The standard variation for each Gaussian fit is also saved in a
separate histogram.

Parametrisation The histogram with mean values are then fitted with Eu-
rega. The figure below shows the input 2D histogram as well as the (black)
dots from the slice fits. The red and blue lines are the currently best and
second best fit function respectively.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Size</th>
<th>Fitness</th>
<th>Equation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.0135497</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = (1.175/\beta \gamma + \beta \gamma - 0.231)/(0.080 + 0.892 \beta \gamma) )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>0.0138698</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.184 + (1.376 - 0.554 \beta \gamma)/\beta \gamma^{2.785} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>0.0135428</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = (\beta \gamma^{0.006} + 1.180/\beta \gamma - 0.211)/(0.079 + 0.905 \beta \gamma) )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>0.0142499</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.102 + 0.906 \beta \gamma^{-0.290/\beta \gamma - 1.947} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.0147863</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.072 + 1.156/(0.099 + \beta \gamma)^{-2.385} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.0210256</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.057 + (0.030 + \beta \gamma)^{-2.132} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>0.0257238</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.040 + 0.970/\beta \gamma^2 )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>0.0276055</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.027 + \beta \gamma^{1.968} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.163132</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = \exp(0.763/\beta \gamma) )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.427812</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 2.508/\beta \gamma )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.01597</td>
<td>( \frac{dE}{dx}(\beta \gamma) = 1.535 )</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\( \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle (\beta \gamma) = \beta \gamma + \frac{1.1751 - 0.2306}{0.8924 \beta \gamma + 0.0797} \)  

(7.7)

\( \Rightarrow \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle (\beta \gamma) = \frac{a + b \beta \gamma + (\beta \gamma)^2}{\beta \gamma (c + d \beta \gamma)} \)  

(7.8)

\( ^2 \) Ts are excellent particles for this study as they behave like heavy muons, whereas R-
Hadrons would add complexity due to fluctuating charge and hadronic interactions.
Inverting

\[
\beta \gamma \left( \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle \right) = \sqrt{4\alpha (\kappa \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle - 1) + (\omega \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle - \rho)^2 + \rho - \omega \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle} \\
2(\kappa \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle - 1) \tag{7.9}
\]

Which finally gives a mass estimate,

\[
m \left( \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle, p \right) = \frac{2 (\kappa \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle - 1) p}{\rho - \omega \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle + \sqrt{(\rho - \omega \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle)^2 + 4\alpha (\kappa \langle \frac{dE}{dx} \rangle - 1)}} \tag{7.10}
\]

where \(\alpha = 1.175, \rho = -0.231, \omega = 0.080, \kappa = 0.892\).

### 7.4 Results

The mass estimator developed in this chapter is not the only one in use in ATLAS. In fact the previous searches for R-Hadrons (including the one in this thesis) all used a different method developed by the ATLAS pixel performance group. The results presented here are compared with this estimator. The Eureqa-method is called the ‘NBI-estimator’ in the following plots. The results are presented using the ‘true’ particle momentum from event generation.
### 7.4.1 ATLAS default method

The ‘default’ mass estimator\cite{12} is based on numerically inverting a parametric Bethe-Bloch function,

\[
\frac{dE}{dx} = \frac{p_1}{\beta p_3} \log \left(1 + (|p_2| \beta \gamma)^{p_3}\right) - p_4. \tag{7.11}
\]

The free parameters \(p_n\) are found by fitting the pion, kaon and proton bands in Figure 7.6. The method can be summarised as

- Generate \(n\) 1D histograms by slicing Figure 7.6 with \(\beta \gamma\) instead of \(p\) along the horizontal axis.

- For each histogram \(i \in n\) fit a three Crystal ball functions to the peaks of each particle type

\[
f(x; \alpha, n, \bar{x}, \sigma) = N \cdot \begin{cases} 
\exp\left(-\frac{(x-\bar{x})^2}{2\alpha^2}\right), & \text{for } \frac{x-\bar{x}}{\sigma} > -\alpha \\
A \cdot (B - \frac{x-\bar{x}}{\sigma})^{-n}, & \text{for } \frac{x-\bar{x}}{\sigma} \leq -\alpha 
\end{cases} \tag{7.12}
\]

where \(A = \left(\frac{n}{\alpha}\right)^n \cdot \exp\left(-\frac{\alpha^2}{2}\right), B = \frac{n}{\alpha} - |\alpha|, N\) is a normalisation factor and \(\alpha, n, \bar{x}\) and \(\sigma\) are parameters which are fitted with the data. The crystal ball function has the advantage that it has a controllable tail emulating the Landau tail and otherwise easy to fit.

- The MPV from each peak in slice \(i\) is plotted on a graph with the corresponding \(\beta \gamma\) value of the histogram.

- When all slices have been fitted individually, eq (7.11) is fitted to the \(\beta \gamma\)-MPV graph to obtain the free parameters \(p_n\).

- We are interested in \(\beta \gamma\) based on \(dE/dx\) and must invert (7.11) to obtain the relativistic speed. It is not possible to invert the function algebraically so the function is numerically inverted based on the specific \(dE/dx\) value.

A good argument for using this estimator is that it is fitted on both data (minimum bias data from 2010) and Monte Carlo and is as such very well-calibrated. In later runs the track multiplicity in most events required us to only reconstruct tracks with a minimum \(p_T = 1 \text{ GeV} / c\) effectively removing the non-mip Standard Model region.

### 7.4.2 Mass estimation performance for R-Hadrons

To estimate how well the mass estimators perform the following comparison is made

\[
\delta(\text{mass}) = \frac{\text{mass}_{\text{est}} - \text{mass}_{\text{true}}}{\text{mass}_{\text{true}}} \tag{7.13}
\]

**Mass resolution** The spread of this distribution is the mass resolution (Figure 7.16) which tells us how much the mass estimate varies from the true value.

Fitting a second degree polynomial to the graphs we find the following relationships,
Figure 7.16: Mass resolution. The blue dots are the NBI estimator and the green dots the ATLAS-default estimator.

\[
\sigma_{\text{NBI}} = 3.324 + 0.067m - 1.816 \times 10^{-5}m^2 \quad (7.14)
\]
\[
\sigma_{\text{Default}} = 2.478 + 0.150m - 1.999 \times 10^{-5}m^2. \quad (7.15)
\]

The resolution divided with the corresponding mass gives us the relative spread (Figure 7.17).

\[
\sigma_{\text{NBI}}/m = 9.939 - 0.008m + 2.939 \times 10^{-6}m^2 \quad (7.16)
\]
\[
\sigma_{\text{Default}}/m = 17.007 - 0.006m + 1.722 \times 10^{-6}m^2. \quad (7.17)
\]

**Bias** An important feature of any statistical estimator is a small bias, or systematic deviation from the true value.

\[
\text{mass}_{\text{bias}} = \text{mass}_{\text{est}} - \text{mass}_{\text{true}} \quad (7.18)
\]
In Figure 7.18 the NBI estimator stays unbiased for all mass points while the default method drifts towards higher estimated masses.

![Figure 7.18: Bias. Deviation from the true mass shown for the NBI estimator (blue) and the Default estimator (green).](image1)

The polynomials below show this tendency quite clearly

\[ \text{bias}_{\text{NBI}} = 0.51 - 0.005m + 8.87 \times 10^{-7}m^2 \]  
\[ (7.19) \]

\[ \text{bias}_{\text{Default}} = 3.85 + 0.053m + 6.339 \times 10^{-5}m^2. \]  
\[ (7.20) \]

**Comparisons** One of the features of the NBI estimator is that it is analytically invertible. This also means it is not describing any effects after the MIP minimum. In Figure 7.19 The expression is compared to both Bethe-Bloch that shows a very clear rise and the Vavilov equation that more closely resembled by the expression.

![Figure 7.19: Comparison between the Eureqa expression in (7.7). The Bethe-Bloch equation (4.14) and the Vavilov equation (4.15) for Silicon. The three functions follow each other in the low-\( \beta \gamma \) regime, but the Eureqa expression flattens out at the MIP level and never rises.](image2)

While both (4.14) and (4.15) diverges the expression converge at,

\[ \lim_{\beta \gamma \to \infty} 1.121 \text{ MeV g}^{-1} \text{cm}^2. \]  
\[ (7.21) \]
The minimum is found at $dE / dx_{\text{min}}(\beta \gamma) = dE / dx_{\text{min}}(7.39) = 1.096 \text{ MeVg}^{-1}\text{cm}^2$ compared to $dE / dx_{\text{Vavilov,min}}(\beta \gamma) = dE / dx_{\text{min}}(3.77) = 1.086 \text{ MeVg}^{-1}\text{cm}^2$ and $dE / dx_{\text{Bethe,min}}(\beta \gamma) = dE / dx_{\text{min}}(3.17) = 1.694 \text{ MeVg}^{-1}\text{cm}^2$.

To give a qualitative impression of the difference between the two estimators all the signal samples available have been plotted in the same histogram (Figure 7.20).

![Graphs showing mass distribution](image)

(a) The new method developed here. (b) The default method.

**Figure 7.20:** A qualitative comparison of the two estimators. Both distributions contain R-Hadron gluino samples with masses at $100 \text{ GeV/c}^2$ intervals between 100 and 1400 $\text{GeV/c}^2$. In both figures the momentum is taken from the event generation stage (truth information).

### 7.5 Conclusion

This chapter reviewed the ATLAS Pixel dE/dx estimator. A geometrical dependence was discovered by studying the interaction of MIP particles in the tracker. A correctional expression has been developed based on symbolic regression and is likely to be applicable to the data if refitted (a lower mean dE/dx is expected due to radiation damage not accounted for in the simulation). A new mass estimator based on Pixel dE/dx has been developed, also based on symbolic regression. It has been shown that the mass resolution of this new estimator is superior to the current estimator for simulated events and using ideal momentum. Further studies are needed to validate its performance based on collision data.
LLPs produced at the LHC will be slow ($\beta \ll 1$) yet penetrating like muons, allowing detection by time-of-flight measurements in calorimeter systems. The Tile Calorimeter (TileCal) in ATLAS is well suited for this kind of measurement with a time resolution $\sigma_t \sim 1$ns which is sufficient for detecting slow particles at the distance of the calorimeter cells. In [58, 69] a Tile calorimeter based ToF method for the ATLAS hadronic calorimeter was introduced. This chapter presents an updated study on how to gain additional $\beta$-resolution by correcting the time-response in the non-linear regime beyond 25ns as well as $\eta$-dependence introduced by the non-projective square calorimeter modules in the other part of the Tile calorimeter. These enhancements stems from the previous assumption that all calorimeter cells are infinitely small and located at the exact centre of the cell coordinate. For the Liquid Argon Calorimeter (LArCalo) with its projective geometry this can be assumed to be true but for the semi-projective geometry of the TileCal it is no longer a fitting assumption as we will discuss later in this note. A correction scheme is devised that allows for a more precise determination of the actual travel length. Another correction will be discussed later as well, relating to the time response of particles with $\beta < 0.4$ which typically have a $t > 20$ns relative to a particle arriving at the speed of light. In this time region the $r-t$ relationship is no longer linear and a direct ToF estimate is no longer valid leading to abnormally low $\beta$-estimates. A relationship that corrects for this non-linear response is presented here. In the last section the performance of these corrections is measured relative to the vanilla algorithm found in earlier reports.

8.1 The Tile calorimeter

The Hadronic Tile Calorimeter is a non-compensating sampling calorimeter where tiles of steel is interleaved plastic scintillators acting as absorber and active detector layers respectively. The Tile calorimeter is divided into a central barrel region ($|\eta| < 1$) with two partitions (around $\eta = 0$), the Long Barrel A (LBA) and Long Barrel C (LBC). On each side of these are two extended barrel partitions EBA and EBC that cover $0.8 < |\eta| < 1.7$. The partitions are segmented into 64 azimuthal ($\phi$) wedge modules providing a near-uniform coverage in the azimuthal direction. The active scintillators are grouped into readout cells giving rise to three radial layers and a semi-projective segmentation along the beam-axis makes the detector response
approximately flat in $\eta$. Each cell is connected to two photomultiplier tubes (PMTs) by bundles wavelength-shifting fibres connected to the scintillators from the side of the modules. The two PMTs have a gain difference of 64 extending the dynamic range of the output signal to cover both low and high energy depositions. The signal from the PMTs are digitalised by front-end electronics and transmitted to the Read Out Driver Boards (RODs) through optical fibres for further processing.

**Figure 8.1:** The readout cell geometry. The modules in Figure 6.14 are connected to form readout cells in three layers A, BC and D. The readout cells are structured to be approximately linear in $\eta$.

![Figure 8.1](image)

8.1.1 Signal processing

Each of the roughly 10000 readout cells are sampled 7 times during a readout window (Figure 8.2). The samples $S_i$ are spaced by 25ns. From these samples the PMT pulse is reconstructed using the following function

$$f(t) = Ag(t_0 - t) + p,$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.1)

where $A$ is the amplitude, $g(t)$ is a normalised pulse shape function, $p$ is the pedestal value and $t$ is the peak position of the pulse at time $t$ relative to a reference time $t_0$. At a readout rate of roughly 1/10µs the RODs are processing $\sim 8.8$GB/s severely restraining the allowed computing time for each pulse reconstruction. To fit (8.1) for all readout cells within the 10 µs window a fast algorithm called Optimal Filtering (OF) is implemented in the ROD DSPs. The algorithm reconstructs the amplitude, time difference and pedestal from the seven samplings using a linear combination of the samples and coefficients $a_i$, $b_i$ and $c_i$ related to the target observables in (8.2), (8.3), (8.4), (8.5).

$$A = \sum_{i=1}^{7} a_i S_i$$ \hspace{1cm} (8.2)

$$At = \sum_{i=1}^{7} b_i S_i$$ \hspace{1cm} (8.3)

$$t = \frac{At}{A}$$ \hspace{1cm} (8.4)

$$p = \sum_{i=1}^{7} c_i S_i$$ \hspace{1cm} (8.5)

Most of the particles measured by ATLAS are expected to travel at close to the speed of light. To make the best use of a limited sampling window the readout time in all time sensitive detectors in ATLAS are centred around
the time a particle leaving the interaction point at the speed of light ($\beta = 1$) would arrive at the respective detector. This means that times measured in each TileCell is calculated relative to the time a massless particle would have arrived at the readout cell. The OF method is optimised to estimate $t$ under the $t \sim 0$ assumption and the resolution is slightly degraded at later times.

### 8.1.2 Calorimeter time resolution

The time resolution of TileCal has been measured during collision runs in 2011 (Figure 8.3). The estimated time resolution for a readout cell $i$ is parameterised by

$$\sigma = \sqrt{p_0^2 + \left( \frac{p_1}{\sqrt{E}} \right)^2 + \left( \frac{p_2}{E} \right)^2}$$

(8.6)

where $1/\sqrt{E}$ is the statistical uncertainty and $1/E$ a noise contribution. $p_0 = 0.533$, $p_1 = 1.331$ and $p_2 = 0.744$ a constants determined by the fit shown in Figure 8.3.

Based on (8.6) it is possible to determine if the TileCal provides sufficient resolution for LLP searches.

In Figure 8.4 the maximum speed allowed to distinguish it from $t = 0$ is plotted as a contour. LLPs produced in pairs at $\sqrt{s} = 7$ TeV have a mean velocity $\beta < 0.85c$ even at $m = 100$ GeV/$c^2$.

### 8.2 Simulation of signal samples

For this study a set of simulated samples where used. The production and simulation is described in Chapter 9 suffice to say that R-Hadron are generated with Pythia 6 and Slepton samples are generated with Herwig. R-Hadrons are produced by generating a gluino pair that is kept stable by decay suppression. The gluinos then hadronise with Standard Model quarks [67] into bound states called R-Hadrons. Sleptons are also kept stable and can be
perceived to be massive muons in their interactions. The generated events are simulated by the Geant 4 transport code where custom extensions handle the complicated hadronic interactions of R-Hadrons when interacting with matter. The Geant 4 simulation is done with the full ATLAS Geometry which is well validated against data.

### 8.3 Characteristic features of LLPs

New types of LLPs are massive and hence slow moving at the LHC. This is quickly accessed by plotting a few representative distributions (Figure 8.5).

Comparing the upper limit on $\beta$ estimation in Figure 8.4 with the $\beta$-spread in Figure 8.5 we see that at $m > 100$ GeV/$c^2$ sufficient resolution is available in all of TileCal.

### 8.4 Calorimeter based time measurements for SMP detection

The utilisation of TileCal and the calorimeters as a whole for ToF estimation has already been established [69]. This note focuses on two enhancements
of the $\beta$-resolution by taking into account the point of the individual cells relative to the IP, as well as the overall linearity in timing. The study has been performed on nominal simulation samples emulating the run conditions throughout 2011. Compared to the previous study this allow us to compare the effects of the enhancement with a more realistic performance scenario.

8.4.1 Data objects

The method described requires access to individual CaloCells which are data object storing information from individual calorimeter readout channels. There are two ways of accessing these at post-reconstruction level. For muon tracks CaloCells in the vicinity of the track are saved to analysis data files (AODs) and can be accessed with ease. Alternatively special derived event summary data (dESDm) files can be constructed to contain CaloCells. This study relies on the latter approach and we use the RPVLL_DESDM files produced centrally in ATLAS for long-lived particle searches. To avoid complications arising with R-Hadrons due to their possible charge-flip properties we rely on inner detector tracks and track extrapolation to the calorimeter layers rather than muon tracks.

To associate tracks with crossed CaloCells a special filler module has been developed within the LongLivedParticleD3PD package that calls the AtlasExtrapolator package and adds any CaloCell to the resulting ntuple file that is crossed by a track. For a CaloCell to be accepted it must have an energy deposition above a noise threshold set individually for each cell by the CaloNoiseTool. The procedure is implemented in the TrackInCaloTools package. For each cell the centre position of the cell along with the arrival time and energy deposition is saved.

Furthermore another package CalodEdxTool has been developed to construct $dE/dx$ estimates for calorimeter cells [63]. This package is based on the same tools as the CaloCell extractor but it calculates the expected track length within a given cell ($dx$) as well as the energy loss in the cell. Any CaloCells marked as ‘bad’ are discarded as well. A combined $dE/dx$ estimate as well as the associated uncertainty $\sigma_{dE/dx}$ is calculated and filled for each track in the LongLivedParticle D3PD.

In previous studies only the first set of CaloCell information was available. With the CalodEdxTool it is possible to make intra-cell corrections correcting for time variations due to tracks grazing a cell or hitting it straight at the centre.

8.4.2 Energy deposition

LLPs deposit relatively small amounts of energy in the calorimeter cells compared to jets. The cell energy distributions in Figure 8.6 illustrates this for a number of R-Hadrons samples. The noise cuts is $\sim 300$ MeV as can be seen in the first bin on the histogram. Otherwise the bulk of the distribution is at $E \sim 1$ GeV. Comparing with Figure 8.4 we expect a time resolution between 1.5 and 1 ns for these particles.
8.4.3 A review of the current time-of-flight method

The time associated with each CaloCell is centred around 0 ns for signals arriving at \( v \sim c \) relative to the trigger time. The actual time-of-flight \( t_{\text{true}} \) is thus related to the cell time \( t_{\text{reco}} \) by

\[
t_{\text{reco}} = t_{\text{true}} - \frac{d_{\text{cell}}}{c}
\]

(8.7)

where \( d_{\text{cell}} \) is the straight line distance from the IP to the cell centre, and \( c \) is the speed of light in vacuum. For relativistic particles a tight distribution around \( t = 0 \) ns is expected while LLPs are expected to have values \( t > 0 \). The range of \( t \) is limited to 75 ns. This causes a distance dependent drop in signal efficiency that for TileCal is happening \( \beta \sim 0.4 \).

Figure 8.7 shows the spread in \( t \) of R-Hadrons (\( \tilde{g} \)) and associated SM particle in the events. The relationship between \( t \) and \( \beta \) is evident in the late arrival times of the massive particles. It is also worthwhile to note that
the $d_{\text{cell}}/c$ normalisation removes the expected offset at progressively larger travel distances.

### 8.4.4 Determining $\beta$ from $t$ and distance

The CaloTime is by itself a relevant discriminator between MIP-like Standard Model particles and LLPs. By calculating the actual speed $\beta$ a deeper connection to the underlying kinematics allows us to determine the particle mass which of course is the fundamental observable we are really trying to reconstruct.

The speed of a particle $\beta$ is related to the time $t$ it takes for it to traverse a distance $d$, which when accounting for (8.7) is expressed by

$$\beta_{\text{cell}} = \frac{v}{c} = \frac{d_{\text{cell}}}{t_{\text{true}} c} = \frac{d_{\text{cell}}}{(t_{\text{reco}} + \frac{d_{\text{cell}}}{c}) c} = \frac{d_{\text{cell}}}{t_{\text{reco}} c + d_{\text{cell}}}. \quad (8.8)$$

The chief objective of this study is to arrive at a precise $\beta$ estimate for our signal region while preserving separation with relativistic particles. To gauge the effect of the corrections we study the $\beta$-resolution

$$\frac{\Delta \beta}{\beta} = \frac{\beta_{\text{est}} - \beta_{\text{true}}}{\beta_{\text{true}}}. \quad (8.9)$$

Speed estimates from individual cells are independently measured allowing for a combination by weighted average. The weights used in this study are the time uncertainty from (8.6)

$$w_i = \frac{1}{\sigma(E_i)^2}. \quad (8.10)$$

The weighted average is calculated as

$$\beta_{\text{est}} = \frac{\sum_{i=0}^{n} w_i \beta_i}{\sum_{i=0}^{n} w_i} \quad (8.11)$$

for all CaloCells $i$ along a track.

### 8.5 Correction to CaloCell time

For relativistic particles extended CaloCell times are not expected, and the linearity of any deviation from $t = 0$ is of little importance. Luckily for LLP searches the time response is fairly linear at least up to $t \sim 25$ ns. Figure 8.8a illustrates this for a number of TileCal cells each corresponding to a distinct line on the scatter plot. The relationship between cell time and $\beta$ is easier to see when we compare the estimated speed with the true particle speed in Figure 8.8b. The tail at $t > 25$ ns is responsible for the tail seen in the Figure 8.10a. To correct for this effect a parameterisation was developed by fitting Figure 8.8b and correcting for the variation from $\Delta \beta / \beta = 0$. 
The distribution in Figure 8.8b was generated based on 120000 R-Hadron events for all TileCal cells as they were shown to have a similar response. The histogram was first fitted in slices along the t-axis with a scalable Breit-Wigner (BW) shape

\[ \sigma(E) = N \frac{\Gamma}{(2\pi)((E - E_0)^2 + (\frac{\Gamma}{2})^2)} \] \hspace{1cm} (8.12)

where \( E_0 \) in this fit, is the central \( (\beta_{est} - \beta_{true}) / \beta_{true} \) value for each \( \Delta t \) slice, and \( \Gamma \) is the width of the BW function. The scale constant \( N \) is introduced ad-hoc to ease the fit. The choice of the BW function is due to its sharply peaking shape, the situation obviously has nothing to do with decay-widths. As initial parameter guesses \( N \) is set to be the peak value of the slice, \( E_0 \) is set to be the Gaussian sample mean for the slice and \( \Gamma \) two times the root-mean-square (RMS). For each slice \( E_0 \) is saved as the Most Probable Value (MPV) with associated errors on the value set to be \( \pm 0.5 \Gamma \). The resulting points are listed in Table 8.1. To find a parameterisation that expresses \( f(t) = (\beta_{est} - \beta_{true}) / \beta_{true} \) the dataset was fitted with Eureqa (Sec. 7.2.1). Four results that fits the dataset the best is presented in Table 8.2.

From these results the second on the list was selected as a good compromise between fit quality and complexity. The resulting equation was solved for \( \beta_{true} \) to yield:
\[
\beta_{\text{corr}} = \frac{\beta_{\text{est}} t}{p_0 t^2 + p_1 + p_2 t \sqrt{\log t} - p_3 t - p_4 t \log t + 1}
\]

where \( p_0 = 0.01397, p_1 = 23.79640, p_2 = 36.65512, p_3 = 35.48987, p_4 = 9.85138. \)

The correction is applied by computing (8.13) for the estimated cell \( \beta \). The correction yields a much narrower distribution shown in Figure 8.9. From the figure it is clear that the correction isn’t perfect and further work with Eureqa can possible result in a better expression.

Nevertheless the result gives a significant improvement and the asymmetrical tail in Figure 8.10 is basically gone and traded for additional statistics around the true value.

8.5.2 Timing correction result

The time correction \( f(\Delta \beta / \beta) \) when applied to R-Hadrons have a measurable effect in particular for high mass samples which can be seen in Figure 8.11a and b.

The effect is more pronounced at high masses due to the longer ToF for heavier particles. For muons the effect of the correction is negligible as we would expect since the \( t = 0 \) region is well-calibrated already. Sleptons represent an intermediate case in the sense that their masses do not exceed 500 GeV/c^2 in our test samples. The \( \beta \)-dependent resolution is shown together with the relative bias in Figures 8.13ab. The correction is applicable to the full TileCal as all the cells have the same time response shown in Figure 8.8b.

![Figure 8.9: Corrected time for R-Hadrons](image)

Figure 8.10: The effect of the timing correction is clearly noticeable for slow particles (a) but relativistic particles are already centred around \( t = 0 \) and not affected by the correction at \( t > 0 \).
Figure 8.11: Effects from the time correction on $\tilde{g}$ separated into two mass ranges at 500 GeV/$c^2$. The time correction is most noticeable for the heavier particles that in general arrives later than the lighter.

8.6 Projective correction for cubic calo cells

A track crossing one of the larger cubic calo cells in Figure 8.1 is assumed to have its time and distance measured relative to the cell centre as the smaller and projective cells. This introduces the visible systematic bias in Figure 8.12 when plotting the $\beta$-resolution as a function of the pseudorapidity for each cell.

The variation shown in Figure 8.12 is around 10% for the largest cells. As with the time drift in the preview section, the cell size bias is correctable with a per-cell fit. To implement the correction, each individual cell in the $r-z$ plane is fitted by a polynomial that then supplies a correction to the nominal $\beta$ estimate. The procedure is similar to the one introduced in the previous section. Each cell is slice-fitted with a Breit-Wigner function to reduce the 2D histogram to a set of data-points. As the cells gradually develops the bias, only cells with a linear correlation $\rho > 10\%$ between $(\beta_{est} - \beta_{true}) / \beta_{true}$ and $\eta$ are fitted.

Figure 8.14 shows a cell fit. The resulting fit parameters along with a validity range defined by the RMS of the distribution is saved to a YAML lookup table that can be read by the analysis code. For a linear relationship
the corrected $\beta$ is then computed from the two fit parameters $a$ and $b$

$$\beta_{corr} = \frac{b \ d_{cell}}{(-a + b + \eta)(c t + d_{cell})}. \quad (8.14)$$

For a second degree polynomial fit the resulting corrected $\beta$ is

$$\beta_{corr} = \pm \frac{d_{cell} \left( \sqrt{4\eta k - 4ak + b^2} \mp b + 2k \right)}{2(c t + d_{cell})(\eta - a + b - k)} \quad (8.15)$$

where $a$, $b$ and $k$ are the three parameters.

### 8.6.1 $\eta$ correction result

The $\eta$ correction mainly affects the outer cells in the extended barrel. As $|\eta| \sim 1/m$ for heavy particles the massive R-Hadrons in this study tend to be detected in the central region. Staus and muons on the other hand receive a correction as their lower masses opens the phase space to the extended barrel. This means that muon-R-Hadrons separation is improved by the correction, while the effect on the R-Hadrons themselves are moderate. The effect of $\eta$ correction on the overall $\Delta \beta / \beta_{true}$ resolution is plotted in Figure 8.18 for R-Hadrons and muons. The effect of fitting a 1 or 2-degree polynomial is studied to give a relative improvement on $\Delta \beta / \beta_{true}$ for muons of 10% for 2-degree relative to 1-degree fits.
Figure 8.15: The result from the $\eta$ correction in the inclusive case with both corrected and uncorrected cells contributing to the $\beta$-estimate.

The cells that benefit from the fitting procedure are all the ones that have an appreciable entry surface pointed towards the IP (Figure 8.16). The variability in $\eta$ is proportional to a relative time offset compared with the trigger time. A way to quantify the need for correction is to look at the correlation between $\Delta \beta / \beta_{\text{true}}$ and $\eta$ for the individual cells. Figure 8.19 show this correlation for cells in $z - \rho$ space. The cells in the central region of the detector are largely uncorrelated except for large cells in the outermost layer. The largest correlations are found in the extended barrel where some Calo-Cells have correlations $\rho > 80\%$. The two $\eta - \Delta \beta / \beta_{\text{true}}$ distributions in Figure 8.17 visually show the corrections applied, in this case to the muons in the $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ sample.

8.7 Combined result

The two corrections are complementary as the time corrections affects very slow particles that tend to be produced centrally while the $\eta$ correction is mainly relevant in the forward regions where lighter and hence faster particles are detectable.
8.8 Summary

Two corrections to the Tile based ToF estimator has been introduced. The combined effect is illustrated by the resolution curves in figures 8.20. Overall $\beta$ resolutions have in some cases improved by a factor of 2 or more. The time correction enables unbiased $\beta$ estimates at $\beta \sim 0.2$ where up to 60% biases had been observed previously. The improvements have not been applied to any searches so far but could be applied to the 2012 run not yet published by ATLAS or future searches at nominal collision energies (Chap. 10).
Figure 8.20: Combined correction result.
CALORIMETER $\beta$ ESTIMATION WITH ATLAS

Figure 8.21: Effects of the corrections presented in this chapter on R-Hadrons, sleptons and muons.
9 Search for long-lived coloured particles in ATLAS with 2011 LHC data

This chapter describes the second search for coloured long-lived particles conducted with the ATLAS detector. Data-taking took place during 2011 where $L = 4.7\, \text{fb}^{-1}$ proton-proton collisions where recorded at 7 TeV centre of mass energy. A general motivation for such a search is given in Section 3. Signal samples, background samples and collision datasets are listed in Section 9.2. The decision on physics trigger is explained in Section 9.3. The event selection is found in Section 9.4, a background estimation technique we used is explained in Section 9.5. Systematic uncertainties, statistical interpretation and Results from the event selection are found in Sections 9.6, 9.7 and 9.8 respectively. Finally the chapter is concluded in Section 9.9 where upper limits on production cross sections are found.

In Chapter 10 the result is presented in the context of ‘Split-Supersymmetry’ (SSUSY), where specifically Figure 10.7 summarises this work and show the future reach of ATLAS searches for SSUSY gluinos.
9.1 Introduction

Searching for coloured long-lived particles is a specific sub-set of searches for long-lived charged particles at colliders and elsewhere. Multiple models (Chap. 3) predict coloured LLPs and a search for such particles are especially motivated at the LHC as it is a hadron collider giving a great potential increase in production cross sections for such objects.

The search is an evolution of our previous search [105] with the first LHC dataset from 2010 conducted on \( L = 34 \text{ pb}^{-1} \) of data. The upper limits from that search are shown in Figure 9.1 at that time we found a lower limit on long-lived gluino production at 586 GeV/\( c^2 \). Searches for Supersymmetry are in general be defined by multiple parameters and two overall mass scales \( m_{1/2} = \tilde{m}, m_0 \) denoting sfermions and sbosons. Our search is vastly simplified, as we simply remove the possibility of particle decay, introduced in SUSY as having a mass scale for the possible decay products so far away in mass scale that the decay is effectively prohibited by limited phase-space. This means that the actual analysis is greatly simplified as we consider that primary LLP stable throughout the ATLAS volume. It also means that placing specific limits on SSUSY is complicated as we don’t make a specific assumption on the high-mass scale that regulates the life-time of the gluino. In Chapter 10 I will nevertheless try to estimate an overall exclusion range for SSUSY based on our implicit assumptions and complementary results from the Higgs boson discovery. The effective model we use when generating Monte Carlo signal samples is based on the production of MSSM gluinos, but with a ad-hoc particle spectrum similar to the one in Figure 9.2 where the sfermions are prohibiting gluino decay.

After event generation the stable gluinos are propagated through ATLAS with a custom Geant 4 module that simulates how a massive coloured particle might hadronise into R-Hadrons and undergo hadronic interactions in dense material. The effect of having a penetrating particle akin to a muon but with much higher mass and colour leads to interesting consequences for track
reconstruction and specific energy loss estimates as the particle can turn neutral in mid-range, acquire double electric charge or simply flip the charge sign all due to colour conservation (see Sec. 2.3). Except for calorimeter dE/dx which is directly sensitive to these effects, it leads to momentum smearing and acceptance loss. The probability of hadronic interaction increases as the particle traverses the calorimeter systems, that is why we have three distinct search strategies which relies on progressively more of the outer ATLAS detector. The three strategies are termed: Inner detector only (ID-Only), ‘Muon Spectrometer Agnostic’ (MS-Agnostic) and ‘Full Detector’ (Full). The ID-Only analysis relies solely on the silicon trackers for momentum and particle identification, while the MS-Agnostic also includes Time-of-Flight from the calorimeter systems. The full detector search allows for muon-spectrometer reconstructed tracks as well which with its longer lever arm gives a better ToF estimate than the MS-Agnostic, but with higher probability of charge flip also further charge confusion for track and momentum reconstruction. My work has focused on the two inclusive searches involving the outer detectors systems as well as the inner trackers, and I will not describe the ID-Only search further, but the result is included in Figure 10.7.

The search for LLPs in ATLAS poses multiple challenges. The collision rate at the LHC defines the read-out rate of the detector systems which are tuned to measure highly relativistic particles within a collision frame of 25 ns. For a massive long-lived particle it takes a finite time \( t = \gamma d/(c\beta) \) to reach a detector system a distance \( d \) away, where \( t \) becomes longer the closer the particle mass approaches the centre of mass energy. In general ATLAS is not designed to do direct particle identification on other than Standard Model particles. That is why we have designed estimators ourselves based on low-level information from detector subsystems. As most of the reconstructed objects in ATLAS are calibrated at high-level, information such as raw timing from each calorimeter measurement is not very precise, and we have designed calibration routines for this kind of information. Also triggering on LLPs is a challenge as no tracking information is available at the trigger decision time. Instead we rely on indirect event topological information. Lastly tracking is in general difficult at very high momentum and the
possible charge flipping does not help in that matter either. As a result of these challenges much of the actual work happens before the final physics analysis, but when that finally takes place the only background is due to mis-reconstructed particles.

The direct signature of LLPs are either one or two particles with anomalously long ToF, high dE/dx and high momentum. In case of a discovery of a new massive LLP a further 'quantum leap' in dE/dx between measurements corresponding to the \( \frac{dE}{dx} \sim q^2 \) dependence on dE/dx in (4.14) would signify that it is a coloured LLP or \( R\text{-Hadron} \). Besides the trigger selection our analysis strategy utilises precise dE/dx and ToF that will be developed in the coming sections.

As schematic overview of the entire analysis is shown in Figure 9.3.

9.2 Data and Simulated samples

9.2.1 Signal Samples

In SSUSY only the gluino is stable, but to allow for a wider search also samples of stable stops and sbottoms where produced. The production mechanism in all cases are based on SUSY MSSM where all particles except the one under study are decoupled by placing their masses at multiple TeVs, forcing the particle to be long-lived.
The underlying structure of protons (Sec. 5.1.1) complicates the production channels which for squarks and gluinos at leading order are [16]

\begin{align*}
\tilde{q}\bar{q} \text{ production:} & \quad q_i + \bar{q}_j \to \tilde{q}_k + \tilde{q}_l \quad (9.1) \\
g + g \to \tilde{q}_i + \tilde{q}_i \quad (9.2) \\
\tilde{q}\bar{q} \text{ production:} & \quad q_i + \bar{q}_j \to \tilde{q}_i + \tilde{q}_j \quad \text{and c.c.} \quad (9.3) \\
\tilde{g}\tilde{g} \text{ production:} & \quad q_i + \bar{q}_j \to \tilde{g} + \tilde{g} \quad (9.4) \\
g + g \to \tilde{g} + \tilde{g} \quad (9.5) \\
\tilde{q}\tilde{g} \text{ production:} & \quad q_i + g \to \tilde{q}_i + \tilde{g} \quad \text{and c.c.} \quad (9.6)
\end{align*}

Both squarks and gluinos are produced in strong interactions with their production cross sections mainly depending on their masses (Figure 9.4). At high masses compared to the collision energy the momentum fraction needed to produce the particles is high and the production is most likely dominated by valence quark interactions. At lower masses and hence lower required momentum fraction the gluon density dominates the proton PDF and gluon fusion is the primary production mode. The \(q\bar{q}\) production diagrams (e) in Figure 9.5 will increase the total cross section depending on the squark mass and are therefore very model dependent [66], due to this, the gluino samples are generated as two independent samples one with \(q\bar{q} \to \tilde{g}\tilde{g}\) and one with \(gg \to \tilde{g}\tilde{g}\) production, allowing us to study the contributions independently. We also ignored any single-particle production modes such as (9.6) and diagram d.3 in Figure 9.5 for the same reasons.

The production was done with Pythia 6.403 [93] integrated into the ATLAS production framework. The primary particles are kept stable artificially ‘by hand’ in Pythia and the remaining sparticles have their masses set at 4 TeV to avoid interference.

After the creation of the sparticles they are hadronised in Pythia allowing the formation of \(R\)-Hadrons comprised of the heavy sparton and a Light Quark System (LQS). The hadronic final-states in general takes the forms \(C_3qq, C_3\bar{q}\bar{q}, C_8qqq, C_8g\), where \(C_3\) and \(C_8\) represent a massive colour triplet or octet respectively [67]. Any other combination is excluded by QCD. The fraction of charge-neutral gluino-gluon bound states (\(C_8g = \tilde{g}\tilde{g}\)) is set as an
ad hoc parameter, where we conservatively choose 10% based on advice from the author of PYTHIA [92]. This fraction is one of the underlying assumptions in this analysis at it translates into the probability of generating a neutral R-Hadron state undetectable with our search strategy.

9.2.2 Cross sections

The search for LLPs itself does not depend on specific production cross sections per se, but in order to gauge the sensitivity of the analysis and for further interpretation we have calculated MSSM cross sections assuming a decoupled mass scale with PROSPINO 2.1 [17] and FAST-NLL. PROSPINO is a next-to-leading-order (NLO) SUSY cross section calculator for hadron colliders. FAST-NLL is program that calculates supersymmetric QCD corrections and resummation of soft gluon emission at next-to-leading-logarithmic (NLL). Uncertainties on the total cross sections are calculated by prescription from the PDF4LHC group [26] and is done based on ATLAS SUSY Group recommendations. Two distinct PDF sets (CTEQ6.6AS and MSTW2008) are applied and varied. CTEQ is varied within its 1σ uncertainty to account for α₃-variations, and both PDFs are varied to account for renormalisation and factorisation scale uncertainties. The uncertainties due to these varia-
9.2.3 Expected particle yield

From the cross sections in Figure 9.6 we can make an estimate of the event yield in our 2011 dataset shown in Table 9.1.

9.2.4 Detector simulation

After event generation the propagation of the R-Hadrons are simulated in Geant 4 with a special package designed to handle interactions of the Light Quark System (LQS) with matter. Depending on the LQS configuration the R-Hadron can be charged and will interact electromagnetically in the same manner as described in Sec. 4.1.2. Being a hadron the bound state can also undergo nuclear interaction that is modelled [71] by letting the LQS interact with a geometric cross section at similar scale as $\pi - p$ scattering (see Figure 4.13). The heavy sparton itself is ignored in these interactions as its de Broglie wavelength falls as $1/M^2$ and hence contributes negligible to the overall hadronic interaction cross section. Instead the sparton acts like a kinetic energy carrier for the R-hadron.
### Table 9.1: Expected number of $\tilde{g}$ R-Hadrons in the simulated signal samples in Table 9.2, based on the cross sections in Figure 9.6.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>$\tilde{g}$ Mass [GeV/$c^2$]</th>
<th>$\sigma$ [pb]</th>
<th>Events/$fb^{-1}$</th>
<th>$\int L dt = 4.7fb^{-1}$</th>
<th>Equivalent integrated luminosity $\sigma$ [fb]</th>
<th>Equivalent integrated luminosity $\sigma$ [fb]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>21200</td>
<td>21200000</td>
<td>99640000</td>
<td>0.000306753</td>
<td>0.00748963</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>625</td>
<td>625000</td>
<td>2937500</td>
<td>0.02323</td>
<td>0.114029</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300</td>
<td>62.1</td>
<td>62100</td>
<td>291870</td>
<td>0.282667</td>
<td>0.701148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400</td>
<td>10.4</td>
<td>10400</td>
<td>48880</td>
<td>1.05041</td>
<td>2.99783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500</td>
<td>2.34</td>
<td>2340</td>
<td>10998</td>
<td>11.5174</td>
<td>10.4567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600</td>
<td>0.634</td>
<td>634</td>
<td>2979.8</td>
<td>52.8274</td>
<td>32.4615</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700</td>
<td>0.194</td>
<td>194</td>
<td>911.8</td>
<td>215.878</td>
<td>90.7328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800</td>
<td>0.0651</td>
<td>65.1</td>
<td>305.97</td>
<td>398.341</td>
<td>241.611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900</td>
<td>0.0233</td>
<td>23.3</td>
<td>109.51</td>
<td>2713.17</td>
<td>612.626</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>0.00867</td>
<td>8.67</td>
<td>40.749</td>
<td>4424.72</td>
<td>1553.68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1100</td>
<td>0.00333</td>
<td>3.33</td>
<td>15.651</td>
<td>27629.4</td>
<td>7587.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1200</td>
<td>0.00131</td>
<td>1.31</td>
<td>6.157</td>
<td>43308.3</td>
<td>18404.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1300</td>
<td>0.000522</td>
<td>0.522</td>
<td>2.4534</td>
<td>129904.0</td>
<td>44810.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1400</td>
<td>0.000208</td>
<td>0.208</td>
<td>0.9776</td>
<td>760282.0</td>
<td>111257.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1500</td>
<td>0.000083</td>
<td>0.083</td>
<td>0.3901</td>
<td>$2.25232 \times 10^6$</td>
<td>274731.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 9.2.5 Expectations from the signal samples

Based on the signal models alone we can make a series of preliminary observations not specific to ATLAS. One category concerns the purely kinematical distributions and another the underlying phenomenology due to nuclear interactions of the LQS, information on both can help guide our search strategy.

#### Kinematics

The dominant signature of LLPs at colliders are their tendency to be moderately relativistic compared with the highly relativistic Standard Model secondaries otherwise observed directly.

In figures 9.7 we see the relationship between momentum and speed at $\sqrt{s} = 7$ TeV for R-Hadrons produced with masses between 100 and 1500
As can be seen from the figures R-Hadrons with masses $m_\tilde{g} \sim 100$ GeV/$c^2$ have enough phase space to be fairly relativistic with Lorentz factors up to $\gamma \sim 15 – 20$. As the mass approaches the production threshold for pair production the phase-space contracts and at $m_\tilde{g} \sim 1500$ GeV/$c^2$ we seldom see boosts of more than $\gamma \sim 2$. These observations have consequences for our hope of utilising specific energy loss as a speed estimator, at $\gamma > 3$ we know from (4.14) that a particle is minimum ionising and we have lost our discrimination power against SM particles, which can also be seen in Figure 9.13 when looking at the $m_\tilde{g} = 100$ GeV/$c^2$ mass bin.

Luckily the low masses are extremes, as we can see in Figure 9.9 at masses larger than $m_\tilde{g} = 400$ GeV/$c^2$ the speed is distinctly less than $c$ even accounting for the kinematic spread shown as the shaded region. At low speeds we could worry that the acceptance in ATLAS is limited by the bunch spacing which leaves an event window between 50 and 25 ns for each collision, a 1 TeV/$c^2$ particle with an average speed of $\beta \sim 0.5$ will manage to move 4.3 m in 25 ns or twice that in 50 ns, enough to reach the calorimeters but not necessarily the muon spectrometer, if the particle is produced in a forward direction. That leads us to the production angles. As we would expect by the decreasing phase space at high masses, the production become gradually more central at high masses. In figures 9.10 we see that more than 90% of the events falls within the $|\eta| < 2.5$ tracking detector acceptance of ATLAS.
‘R-baryogenesis’ Earlier studies [71] show some characteristic features of coloured massive particles with an additional conserved quantum number (R-parity, KK-parity). One interesting observation is that meson states have a chance of acquiring a baryon number. It was found that 90% of all meson-$g$ states have converted to a baryon state after traversing 1 m of iron, Figure 9.11 shows the conversion fraction as a function of penetration depth. The reverse process of converting baryons into mesons is disfavoured based on the interaction probability and in general due to kinematics [67].

Apart from the baryophile tendencies of R-hadrons, we also note that a substantial fraction of the produced R-Hadrons are neutrals. The fraction found with Pythia 8 is summarised in Figure 9.12 for gluinos.

**Hadronic energy loss** During hadronic interaction the amount of deposited energy scale with the kinetic energy of the heavy sparton as can be seen from Figure 9.11b, at $\sqrt{s} = 7$ TeV the hadronic energy loss for $m > 500$ GeV is around 1 GeV per interaction.

**Electromagnetic energy loss** Ionisation loss is one of our primary identification methods. Based on the velocity profile in Figure 9.9 we expect a mean specific energy loss above the MIP level as illustrated in Figure 9.13.
**Tables of signal samples**  To summarise the Monte Carlo signal samples produced for this study the different samples have been listed in tables 9.2 and 9.3 below. The three scattering models: ‘generic’, ‘regge’ and ‘intermediate’ represent variations in how the R-Hadrons are thought to hadronically interact. The ID is an ATLAS specific label that is kept here for internal reference, it allows anybody to look up the actual generator configuration used to produce the sample through 1.


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>mass (GeV)</th>
<th>generic scattering events</th>
<th>Regge scattering events</th>
<th>intermediate scattering events</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114760 5k</td>
<td>114790 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118523 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114761 10k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118524 ~5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114762 10k</td>
<td>114792 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118525 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114763 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118526 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114764 10k</td>
<td>114794 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118527 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114765 10k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118528 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114766 10k</td>
<td>114796 5k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118529 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114767 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118530 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114768 10k</td>
<td>114798 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118531 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>114769 5k</td>
<td>114799 5k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>118532 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1100</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>144215 10k</td>
<td>144235 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>144220 10k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1200</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>144216 5k</td>
<td>144221 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>144222 10k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1300</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>144217 5k</td>
<td>144237 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>144222 10k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1400</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>144218 10k</td>
<td>144237 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>144223 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1500</td>
<td>gg</td>
<td>144219 10k</td>
<td>144239 10k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>q̅q</td>
<td>144224 5k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

All samples have been fully simulated in Geant 4 with no fast parameterization applied due to the complicated detector response of these particles. After simulation a digitalisation process with little R-Hadron specific routines and general reconstruction was done. The output from reconstruction was further processed into the LLPD3PD where low-level estimators such as Calorimeter ToF and dE/dx are calculated. The LLPD3PD is a generic ROOT ntuple that allows us to run analysis on machines without our somewhat resource demanding ATLAS framework.
9.2.6 Background Samples

The considered background MC samples include di-jet and $W \rightarrow \mu \nu$ and $Z \rightarrow \mu \mu$ events generated with PYTHIA as well as (semi)leptonic $t \bar{t}$ and various single-top events generated with MC@NLO \[51\] + HERWIG/JIMMY \[32\]. An overview on the theoretical cross sections and the available statistics is given in Table 9.4. Note that the background estimation is completely data driven and does not rely on these samples.

9.2.7 Data Sample

The presented analysis was done with data recorded during proton-proton runs in 2011 at $\sqrt{s} = 7$ TeV. The total delivered amount of integrated luminosity was 5.61 fb$^{-1}$ of which we managed to record 5.25 fb$^{-1}$ with ATLAS. Since this was the second year of LHC operation the accelerator was still under commissioning that meant changing beam conditions throughout the season. The instantaneous luminosity was gradually increased and by the end of the year a peak luminosity was reached at $3.65 \times 10^{33}$ cm$^{-2}$s$^{-1}$ or about half of the nominal value at 14 TeV. Table 9.5 summaries each individual run period that in general are distinguished by changes to the overall beam configuration. Two of the columns that are especially relevant for our
Search for long-lived coloured particles in ATLAS with 2011 LHC data

Analysis are $\mu_{\text{avg}}$, the average maximum number of simultaneous collisions per bunch-crossing, or pile-up and the bunch spacing $\Delta t$ that is the amount of time between each collision. Pileup has detrimental effects on our PID estimators as low-level energy readings polluted by a stray particle crossing a calorimeter cell within the same readout window as a candidate track can increase $dE/dx$ by a MIP or throw off the measurement time. This kind of contamination is avoided by discarding overlapping tracks, but it is potentially a problem if the pileup events are not reconstructed. The bunch spacing was mentioned in Sec. 9.2.5 and is one of our main motivations for a Muon spectrometer- ‘agnostic’ search that avoid relying on the outer layers of ATLAS for triggering.

### Table 9.5: Generously lifted from Mortiz Backes 2013

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Period</th>
<th>Date Range</th>
<th>Run Range</th>
<th>Stable / Ready Lum [fb$^{-1}$]</th>
<th>Max. Inst. Lum [10$^{36}$cm$^{-2}$s$^{-1}$]</th>
<th>$\mu_{\text{avg}}$</th>
<th>Fill Range</th>
<th>Bunch Count</th>
<th>Bunch $\Delta t$ [ns]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>Mar-13 - Mar-21</td>
<td>177531 - 177965</td>
<td>9 / 8.7 (97%)</td>
<td>158</td>
<td>7.3</td>
<td>1613 - 1640</td>
<td>3 - 138</td>
<td>75 - 2500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>Mar-21 - Mar-24</td>
<td>177986 - 178109</td>
<td>18 / 18 (97%)</td>
<td>249</td>
<td>9.2</td>
<td>1642 - 1647</td>
<td>138 - 194</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>Apr-14 - Apr-29</td>
<td>179710 - 180481</td>
<td>188 / 185 (98%)</td>
<td>719</td>
<td>7.6</td>
<td>1710 - 1746</td>
<td>214 - 598</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Apr-30 - May-03</td>
<td>180614 - 180776</td>
<td>54 / 52 (98%)</td>
<td>841</td>
<td>7.8</td>
<td>1748 - 1756</td>
<td>598 - 700</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>May-15 - May-25</td>
<td>182013 - 182519</td>
<td>162 / 158 (97%)</td>
<td>1113</td>
<td>8.1</td>
<td>1783 - 1807</td>
<td>14 - 874</td>
<td>50 - 1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>May-27 - Jun-14</td>
<td>182726 - 183462</td>
<td>580 / 572 (99%)</td>
<td>1278</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1809 - 1868</td>
<td>874 - 1042</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>Jun-16 - Jun-25</td>
<td>183544 - 184169</td>
<td>291 / 286 (98%)</td>
<td>1278</td>
<td>6.9</td>
<td>1870 - 1902</td>
<td>1041 - 1318</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td>Jul-30 - Aug-04</td>
<td>186516 - 186755</td>
<td>244 / 240 (98%)</td>
<td>2023</td>
<td>9.8</td>
<td>1992 - 2002</td>
<td>1317</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K</td>
<td>Aug-04 - Aug-22</td>
<td>186873 - 187815</td>
<td>695 / 684 (98%)</td>
<td>2356</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2002 - 2040</td>
<td>1317</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>Sep-07 - Oct-05</td>
<td>188902 - 190343</td>
<td>1653 / 1621 (98%)</td>
<td>3295</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>2086 - 2183</td>
<td>250 - 1318</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Oct-06 - Oct-30</td>
<td>190503 - 191933</td>
<td>1202 / 1174 (98%)</td>
<td>3896</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>2185 - 2268</td>
<td>2 - 138</td>
<td>25 - 8000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>Mar-13 - Oct-30</td>
<td>177531 - 191933</td>
<td>5521 / 5408 (98%)</td>
<td>3896</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1613 - 2268</td>
<td>2 - 1380</td>
<td>25 - 5000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The LHC was not the only part of the experiment that changed during the year. ATLAS itself being a complex system also had varying efficiencies as subsystems failed and where repaired. To account for changing detector conditions a system was introduced to make it easier to quantify defects and define periods where data was of ‘analysis grade’, depending on what systems where required by a specific analysis. The ATLAS Data Quality team compiles all defects reported by the individual sub system’s experts and generates a ‘good run list’ (GRL), that specifies in 2 minute intervals when the detector delivered reliable data.

This list is in XML format (Figure 9.14) that can then be read during analysis to skip events if flagged as bad. Another use of these GRLs is to
estimate the integrated luminosity for the data samples used in a specific analysis. With specific triggers the actual integrated luminosity in a sample depends on whether the triggers required were online and if pre-scaled to what extent a single event represents multiple events statistically.

## 9.3 Trigger Selection

To trigger on R-Hadrons we principally rely on missing energy triggers, as no track-based triggers where available in 2011 and Muon triggers fail to serve due the low chance of R-Hadrons being charged and arriving within a bunch crossing at the Muon system.

The most direct way to trigger on LLPs are simply reconstructing their momenta and their speeds. Due to the high collision rate at the LHC it has so far not been feasible to read out the tracking system and reconstruct particles at trigger time. Instead we could rely on the muon system where the particle multiplicity and detector technology allows for a fast momentum estimate of

Figure 9.15: Any associated remnants from the strong production of the coloured LLP pair will likely be heavily boosted by the recoil of the two massive particles. The LLPs themselves leave the calorimeter system unscathed, only depositing a small fraction of their energy. From the transverse energy imbalance in the event it is then inferred that a large portion of the total energy must be missing. We exploit this when using a ‘missing energy trigger’ with no muon energy compensation.
penetrating particles. Here the problem again arises that the time frame in which an event is assumed to be correlated with detector responses is on the order of 50 ns as mentioned earlier. This leads to a minimum time of arrival at the trigger stations in the muon spectrometer effectively excluding slow particles. The effect on our lowest unprescaled muon triggers in 2011 is seen in Figure 9.16(b).

To regain some trigger efficiency within ATLAS we instead rely on the recoil from the LLPs onto initial state radiation. In Figure 9.15 the event displayed shows two R-hadrons with rest masses of 700 GeV/c^2 and a summed pT in excess of 560 GeV moving to the right. Momentum conservation forces the ISR remnants to the left giving rise to a proportional energy deposition in the calorimeter system. As the R-Hadrons themselves don’t deposit their full energy (only 10 – 30 GeV) in the detector it escapes ATLAS and the energy balance is skewed registering as missing transverse energy (MET). Quite substantial amounts of energy is lost in this manner and we can use MET as a trigger quantity. In Figure 9.16(a) the turn-on curves for the selected triggers are shown. The internal ATLAS notation implies that an EF_xe60_noMu trigger is a trigger with at least 60 GeV of MET based only on the energy deposited in the calorimeters without any muon spectrometer contributions.

As we are searching for new hypothetical particles, pre-scaled triggers are of little interest, even if they have lower trigger thresholds. Combined with the increasing beam intensity, this meant that the available un-pre-scaled triggers during 2011 had progressively higher trigger thresholds. In table 9.6 the lowest unprescaled missing energy triggers are listed for each data period. To attain the highest trigger efficiency possible we combined both muon triggers and MET triggers in our search as they where shown to be decorrelated at high-β. The muon triggers in general requires p_T > 18 GeV/c as is noted in the naming scheme for the muon triggers.

An overall trigger efficiency can be seen in Figure 9.17. We can also see that the amount of ISR in the event becomes increasingly relevant as q\Bar{q} production begins to dominate at high masses where less are produced.

The overall trigger efficiency is between 10 and 30% depending on the hypothesis mass.
Table 9.6: Trigger chains utilised in this analysis along with an indication in which data taking periods these were un-pre-scaled on all three trigger levels. The orange dots where actively used in the selection at the corresponding data period.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trigger by period</th>
<th>D</th>
<th>E</th>
<th>F</th>
<th>G</th>
<th>H</th>
<th>I</th>
<th>J</th>
<th>K</th>
<th>L</th>
<th>M</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>EF_xe60_noMu</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_xe60_tight_noMu</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_xe60_verytight_noMu</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_xe70_noMu</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_mu18</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_mu18_MG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_mu18_medium</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EF_mu18_MG_medium</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 9.17: Trigger efficiencies for a selected MET trigger with an onset at 70 GeV

9.3.1 Integrated luminosity

The integrated luminosity was calculated by summing the contributions of all data collection intervals marked as fit for physics by a good run list (Sec. 9.2.7) that required well functioning calorimetry. If for some reason the chosen triggers for each run period where offline at a specific interval it would be excluded. The overall estimate was computed by a tool internally available in ATLAS called the iLumiCalc tool. The luminosity estimate for the analysis is \( \int \mathcal{L} \, dt = 4.7 \text{fb}^{-1} \)

Pileup re-weighting For the R-Hadron search, attempts were made to align the running and detector conditions in MC with the actual conditions during data taking. For this the MC sample are divided into four different sets where each set represents a number of data taking periods. In each set the distribution of pileup events and the detector conditions were matched to the conditions in the represented periods. During data preparation, some data was not available to us in spite our best efforts. To make the MC sample represent the data that was actually available to our analysis, we re-weighted the MC periods to the fraction of data that they represent. The fractions of MC and data that fall into each period are shown in Table 9.7. The correction weights that can be derived from these fractions are also shown. We used the weights in all cut-flows. This explains the fractional number of signal events
9.4 Event Selection

The analysis described in this thesis is based on the assumption that the particle of interest is massive, long-lived and charged. The methodology does not concern itself with colour charge (see instead [97, 63, 71]), hence the analysis in general covers identification of any LLP with electric charge.

This choice imply that we in principle are conducting a statistical test on mass distributions defined by

$$m_i = \frac{p}{(\beta \gamma)_i}$$  \hspace{1cm} (9.8)

where $\beta \gamma$ is one of the many previously introduced ways of estimating speed in ATLAS, and $p$ is the momentum from the track that caused the estimator’s signal.

Our analysis thus relies on the quality of the $\beta \gamma$ estimates and the momentum. This quality is assured by a series of cuts on the input variables we call a preselection (Sec. 9.4.2).

As we know that the chance of a hadronic interaction taking place increases proportionally with the amount of material the R-Hadron traverses, we chose to conduct two analysis scenarios one excluding the muon spectrometer (Called MS-Agnostic search) and one including $\beta$-measurements and trigger information from it (but relying on the inner detector for momentum due to the high probability of charge confusion after the R-Hadron has traversed the dense calorimeters).

The calorimeter systems’ (and in case of the ‘full’ detector search, also the MS’) $\beta$-measurements are combined in a weighted average described in Section 9.4.1. The specific ionisation loss from the pixel system (Pixel-$dE/dx$) defines a second speed estimator that due to the technological ‘orthogonality’ with the ToF estimators are kept as a separate independent measurement.

The remaining $dE/dx$ estimates was dropped as the pixel based estimate has superior $\beta$-resolution for R-Hadrons, leaving no incentive to add further complexity to the analysis by introducing $dE/dx$ from the calorimeters (with charge flips).

We then have two speed estimators: Pixel-$dE/dx$ based $\beta \gamma$ and ToF based $\beta'$ and the particle momentum as our three discriminating variables. Based on these, the final selection is done in a way that optimises the signal region for each specific R-Hadron hypothesis (Sec. 9.4.3).

The final result are three 2D histograms (one for signal, background and data) with $\beta$ and $\beta \gamma$-mass estimates in each respective dimension as shown in Figure 9.18.

| Table 9.7: Fraction of data and corresponding MC for each data taking period. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| data periods | fraction of MC | \(\mathcal{L} \text{ [pb}^{-1}\) | fraction of Data | correcting weight |
| B-D | 3.2% | 166.65 | 3.5% | 1.106 |
| E-H | 17.4% | 948.576 | 20.2% | 1.158 |
| LJK | 25.8% | 1154.3 | 24.6% | 0.950 |
| L,M | 53.5% | 2431.74 | 51.7% | 0.965 |

in some cases.
A region on this mass plane is found that defines our counting window. All events in this window are summed. A statistically significant excess of measured events in the counting region compared with the expected number of Standard Model background events, constitutes a discovery. In case of a null result we can based on the signal expectation produce an upper limit estimate on the signal production cross section.

### 9.4.1 ToF $\beta$ combination

The combination of $\beta$ estimates from Calorimeters, MS MDT and RPC stations (Section 6.5) is done based on their underlying detector’s time resolution and geometric acceptance. We combine these measurements as a weighted average with their individual measurement uncertainties as weights $1/\sigma_{err}$

$$\hat{\beta} = \frac{\sum \beta_i/\sigma_i^2}{\sum 1/\sigma_i^2}, \quad \sigma_{\hat{\beta}}^2 = \frac{1}{\sum 1/\sigma_i^2}. \quad (9.9)$$

The combination is based on the already combined calorimeter-$\beta$ and the MS RPC and MDT $\beta$s. All of the inputs themselves are well calibrated and well determined (Chap. 8 and Ref. [111]) and each can stand on its own, only the best of these are added to the combination.

First the quality of the individual $\beta$-measurement must satisfy

$$0 < \beta_i < 2 \quad (9.10)$$

and the individual measurements at the sub-detector level must be compatible with

$$\text{Prob}(\chi^2_i, ndof) > 0.0001 \quad (9.11)$$

Next all the available estimators must be compatible with we judge by the combined $\chi^2$ here assuming all three estimates survived the individual qual-
ity cut:
\[ \chi^2 = \frac{(\hat{\beta} - \beta_{\text{calo}})^2}{\sigma_{\text{calo}}^2} + \frac{(\hat{\beta} - \beta_{\text{MDT}})^2}{\sigma_{\text{MDT}}^2} + \frac{(\hat{\beta} - \beta_{\text{RPC}})^2}{\sigma_{\text{RPC}}^2} \]  
(9.12)

\[ ndof = \text{Number of available estimators} - 1 \]  
(9.13)

The p-value must satisfy \( p(\chi^2, ndof) > 0.0001 \) and \( \sigma < 0.04 \) otherwise we drop the event from the analysis. If only one estimator is available (or in case of the MS Agnostic search we only have the calorimeter based), then it must have \( \sigma < 0.1 \) to be included in the selection.

### 9.4.2 Preselection

The preselection is fundamentally divided into four categories

- Event quality
- Track quality
- Pixel dE/dx estimator quality
- Tof estimator quality

All four categories aim to discard the event based on badly measured quantities while retaining the actual hypothesis optimising cuts for later.

**Event quality cuts** concerns the overall run conditions and status of the detector. At this level the triggers in Section 9.3 are applied and a good run list (Sec. 9.2.7) based on standard quality criterions is consulted to discard events recorded during transient problems with needed sub-detector systems. The electromagnetic calorimeter some times suffered from noise bursts that we also veto due to the heavy reliance on it.

The data acquisition model in ATLAS split the output from trigger decisions into multiple output data streams to optimised readout-throughput. We are using data from multiple streams (JetEtMiss, Muon and debug streams) we also remove identical overlapping events that happened to be recorded by more than one stream. Events that fail to reconstruct within the processing window of the high-level software trigger are saved in a debug stream. R-Hadrons could conceivably be found in that stream and we therefore included it as well.

**Track quality** All tracks are associated with estimators based upon the hits along the track. For any measurement beyond the TRT that means we extrapolate the trajectory, into the calorimeters. If it matches a muon segment track the two are combined in a new fit and the object is called a combined muon. For R-Hadrons that have a tendency of flipping their charges this can have decremental effects in the combined momentum reconstruction, which is why we solely rely on the inner detector momentum even if the track is matched to a muon segment. To make sure the track is well determined even with abnormal ionisation in the trackers and possibly charge-flipping, we apply low-level quality cuts rather than overall track-fit quality requirements. Starting from the vertex, the candidate track must have impact parameters,

\[ z_0 < 10 \text{ mm} \quad \text{and} \quad d_0 < 2 \text{ mm}, \]  
(9.14)
where $z_0$ is the longitudinal and $d_0$ the transverse impact parameters respectively. This ensures we are dealing with a well determined track origin (and $t_0$) from a primary particle.

Next comes the **silicon pixel tracker**, which our 2-fold interest both for tracking and dE/dx leads us to require,

$$N_{dE/dx}^{\text{Pixel}} > 1 \quad (9.15)$$

- or at least two pixel hits that also have been used to determine the $dE/dx$ value on the track (see requirements in Sec. 7.1.2).

The **silicon strip tracker** is the primary tracking system for our search as it is not responsible for any $\beta$-estimators and have a good detector resolution and sufficient distance from the vertex to give an adequate momentum estimate even at high momentum (see Figure 6.11). We require,

$$N_{\text{hits}}^{\text{SCT}} + N_{\text{dead sensors}}^{\text{SCT}} > 5 \quad (9.16)$$

where by dead sensors it is meant that if the sensor was alive it was within acceptance to contribute a hit to the track.

In addition to the two silicon trackers the **straw-based TRT** must have at least,

$$N_{\text{hits}}^{\text{RT}} > 6 \quad \text{if } |\eta| < 1.9. \quad (9.17)$$

The **transverse momentum** must be

$$p_T > 10 \text{ GeV}/c \quad (9.18)$$

and the **momentum** must be within

$$20 \text{ GeV}/c < p < 3.5 \text{ TeV}/c. \quad (9.19)$$

These cuts gives a decent momentum side-band for data-driven background estimation (Sec. 9.5). The track must be well within the tracking volume with a **pseudo-rapidity**

$$|\eta| < 2.0 \quad (9.20)$$

to avoid non-linear responses from tracking and estimators.

**Pixel dE/dx estimator quality** At high track multiplicity there is a chance of multiple particles crossing the same pixel cell, giving rise to higher levels of ionisation ($\sim 2 \geq$ MIPs) faking a signal. To avoid this, we disallow **shared pixel hits**, and set a minimum distance to all other tracks in the event,

$$N_{\text{shared hits}}^{\text{pixel}} = 0, \quad \Delta R_{\text{Tracks} p_T > 10 \text{GeV}/c} > 0.25. \quad (9.21)$$

A pixel dE/dx measurement must be present

$$0 < dE/dx < 20 \text{MeVg}^{-1}\text{cm}^2 \quad (9.22)$$

and the associated $\beta\gamma$ estimate must be

$$0 < \beta\gamma < 10. \quad (9.23)$$
The calorimeter-based ToF $\beta$ estimate requires good isolation from other activity in the calorimeter and we place a jet-isolation cut at

$$\Delta R_{\text{jet}} > 0.3.$$  \hfill (9.24)

In case of the MS Agnostic search we only require ToF from the calorimeter, where we demand

$$\sigma_{\beta_{\text{calo}}} < 0.1, \quad p(\chi^2, ndf) > 0.001 \quad \text{and} \quad 0 < \beta_{\text{calo}} < 2$$  \hfill (9.25)

For the full detector search we use the combination described in Sec. 9.4.1 where,

$$0 < \beta_{\text{calo}} < 2 \quad \text{OR} \quad 0 < \beta_{\text{MDT}} < 2 \quad \text{OR} \quad 0 < \beta_{\text{RPC}} < 2$$  \hfill (9.26)

$$\sigma_\beta < 0.04 \quad \text{and} \quad p(\hat{\chi}^2, ndf) > 0.0001.$$  \hfill (9.27)

To avoid anomalous time measurements due to cosmic rays a cut is applied to the full detector search that requires any other track to either have a different charge or be at a different angle wrt. the interaction point,

$$|\eta_i + \eta_j| > 0.005 \quad \text{OR} \quad |\phi_i + \phi_j - \pi| > 0.005 \quad \text{OR} \quad q_i \neq q_j.$$  \hfill (9.28)

After the preselection a small ntuple is produced and passed to the final event selection described in the next sub section.

### 9.4.3 Signal Region Optimisation

The goal of the final selection is to count how many new particles have been produced if they exist. This count is conducted in such a way that the signal sensitivity is maximised, that is, the signal to noise ratio is as large as possible. This optimisation is done under the assumption that the signal is rare compared to background processes and so to enhance the probability of detection the particle if it exists we must find a region in observable-space that favours the signal hypothesis.

As have been described in earlier chapters, massive long-lived particles can be discriminated against known SM particles due to their relative speed and ionisation when produced at the LHC\(^2\). After combining all ToF estimators (Sec. 9.4.1) into one (called $\beta$ henceforth), we also chose to use specific energy loss ($dE/dx$) from the pixel detector to estimate speed in an uncorrelated way (we call this estimator $\beta_{\gamma}$ to distinguish if from the ToF estimator). The last component needed to discriminate against SM background is in the track momentum $p$.

The final hypothesis-dependent selection is done solely in an observable-space spanned by these three variables $\beta, \beta_{\gamma}, p$.

The selection is designed to accommodate the decreasing momentum resolution as the hypothesis rest mass increases and also the relative difference in $\beta$ resolution of the two estimators.

In summary the selection proceed along the following steps:

- $\beta, \beta_{\gamma}$ plane is scanned to find the optimal cut values.
- Background distribution is estimated in a data-driven way.
- An optimal mass cut is found in the $m_{\beta} - m_{\beta_{\gamma}}$-plane.

\(^2\) As the momentum fraction transferred to the rest masses rather than their kinetic energies, the particles then become slow moving.
• The number of events with at least one candidate particle is counted for data and background. Signal efficiency is estimated.

This structure was found most suitable when requiring a data-driven approach to background estimation.

Each of these steps are described in detail below.

$\beta - \beta \gamma$ cut optimisation The background estimation method (Sec. 9.5) combines $\beta, \beta \gamma$ and $p$ to form mass estimates. Before this is done no expectation on the rate of background is available, any cuts on $\beta, \beta \gamma$ after the background is generated will change and render the distribution false.

$\beta$ and $\beta \gamma$ by themselves provides excellent discrimination power that would be smeared by the momentum in the mass estimates, I decided to cut on them before the background estimate was calculated.

This cut was found by defining a momentum side-band below 140 GeV/$c$ where most of the signal hypotheses didn’t go. This allows collision data with $p < 140$ GeV to serve the role of background in the cut optimisation under the assumption that $\beta - \beta \gamma$ are independent of momentum for Standard Model background (Sec. 9.5). The optimisation was done by producing two 2D histograms one for data in the sideband and one for a specific signal hypothesis where the dimensions on the axes are $\beta$ and $\beta \gamma$. Both observables are optimised simultaneously as they are correlated in signal and the approach allows for an implicit handling of their relative resolutions.

The Figures 9.19a and b show the regions for signal and background respectively. To find a region in the $\beta - \beta \gamma$-plane that retains the maximum amount of signal $(S)$ while removed the most background $(B)$ a signal significance plane was computed by summing all entries from $\beta_0, \beta \gamma_0$ to $\beta_{\text{cut}}, \beta \gamma_{\text{cut}}$ for each bin

$$S = \sum_{i,j=0}^{\text{cut}} \text{entry}_{i,j}, \quad B = \sum_{i,j=0}^{\text{cut}} \text{entry}_{i,j},$$

(9.29)

The sums where then applied to compute the signal sensitivity [35]

$$\text{med}[Z_w] = \sqrt{2((S + B) \ln(1 + S/B) - S)}$$

(9.30)
which is an approximation of the poissonian likelihood ratio between signal
and background. In the small signal limit \( S \ll B \) it turns into

\[
\text{med}[Z_w] \approx \frac{S}{\sqrt{B}}.
\]  

(9.31)

For the planes in Figure 9.19, equation (9.30) results in a sensitivity profile
shown in Figure 9.20.

![Figure 9.20: Sensitivity profile](image)

On this plane the maximum value indicates the boundary with the optimal
cuts. The resulting \([\beta, \beta\gamma]_{\text{cut}}\) values are then applied to data, signal and the
background estimator input (Figure 9.21).

**Mass cut optimisation**  With the background expectation normalised to data,
and the signal sample ready, the final selection cut can be applied.

The cut is a mass window around the expected signal region. One way to
define this window would be to reapply (9.30) this time to the mass plane.
As the method is very sensitive to the amount of background (and signal) we
found that the resulting mass window was too restrictive. Instead we went
with a more fixed definition where 90% of the signal should be conserved
after the cut was applied. The boundary was found be assuming the signal
mass peak is Gaussian, where only the lower mass side was constrained by
the window. The solution is then given by the cumulative distribution func-
tion (cdf)

\[
90\% = 1 - \text{cdf}(\mathcal{N}(\mu, \sigma), x)
\]

(9.32)

\[
= 1 - \frac{1}{2} \text{erfc} \left( \frac{\mu - x}{\sqrt{2} \sigma} \right)
\]

(9.33)

where \( \mathcal{N}(\mu, \sigma) \) is a Gaussian PDF, with mean \( \mu \) and standard deviation \( \sigma \)
and \( x \) is the cumulative boundary we want to find. The solution is

\[
x = \mu - 1.28155\sigma
\]

(9.34)
Which then is our lower boundary for each mass dimension. $\mu$ and $\sigma$ are found by fitting the 1D mass distributions for each signal hypothesis after applying $\beta - \beta \gamma$ cuts (Figure 9.22).

With the mass window defined by $x$ and up to a cutoff$^3$ of 3 TeV, the 2D histograms for data, background and signal is integrated to find the number

---

$^3$ We introduced a mass cutoff in case erroneous momentum reconstruction created high momentum outliers.

---

Figure 9.21: The cut region found by optimising the S/B ratio. The orange squares represent a 200 GeV/c$^2$ R-Hadron $\hat{g}$ sample.

Figure 9.22: 500 > $p$ > 100 Joint PDFs
of candidate in the data sample. As the models we are testing assumes pair produced LLPs we only count the candidate with the highest \( p_T \) in each event. The absolute amount of signal events passing the selection holds no intrinsic value as we don’t test a specific cross section hypothesis. Instead the signal observation efficiency is calculated as \( \varepsilon = N_{\text{obs}} / N_{\text{gen}} \) where \( N_{\text{gen}} \) is the number of generated events after luminosity and pile-up corrections are applied.

The final cut windows found by applying the methods described in this chapter is found in the following tables (Table 9.8, 9.9 and 9.10).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>( \beta ) cut</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) cut</th>
<th>( \beta ) lower cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta ) upper cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) lower cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) upper cut (TeV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>200 GeV</td>
<td>0.902</td>
<td>182.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>155.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>262.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>236.5 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>344.7 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>314.0 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>423.7 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>403.5 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>502.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>481.6 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>575.6 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>566.8 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800 GeV</td>
<td>0.846</td>
<td>634.9 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>626.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>711.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>694.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000 GeV</td>
<td>0.832</td>
<td>785.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>817.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1100 GeV</td>
<td>0.818</td>
<td>839.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>856.9 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1200 GeV</td>
<td>0.832</td>
<td>896.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>864.8 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1300 GeV</td>
<td>0.818</td>
<td>999.8 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>995.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1400 GeV</td>
<td>0.804</td>
<td>1050.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>1123.0 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 9.8: Counts for gluinos - Full detector

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>( \beta ) cut</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) cut</th>
<th>( \beta ) lower cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta ) upper cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) lower cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) upper cut (TeV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>200 GeV</td>
<td>0.902</td>
<td>172.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>161.9 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300 GeV</td>
<td>0.888</td>
<td>255.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>242.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>331.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>327.0 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>407.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>395.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>481.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>480.7 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>541.5 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>546.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>626.8 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>600.8 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>724.9 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>701.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 9.9: Counts for stops - Full detector

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>( \beta ) cut</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) cut</th>
<th>( \beta ) lower cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta ) upper cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) lower cut (GeV)</th>
<th>( \beta' \gamma ) upper cut (TeV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>200 GeV</td>
<td>0.888</td>
<td>172.7 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>166.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300 GeV</td>
<td>0.888</td>
<td>252.0 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>246.0 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400 GeV</td>
<td>0.888</td>
<td>329.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>326.8 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>409.5 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>407.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>479.6 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>478.4 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700 GeV</td>
<td>0.860</td>
<td>554.1 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>555.3 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>630.0 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>624.2 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900 GeV</td>
<td>0.874</td>
<td>672.5 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
<td>693.9 GeV</td>
<td>3.0 TeV</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 9.10: Counts for sbottoms - Full detector

**9.5 Background Estimation**

Background estimation is necessary due to two things. The amount of monte carlo simulations needed to produce a satisfactory spectrum with the amount of statistics needed at the LHC is impractical to compute, especially QCD background. The other reason is that we rely on ‘fringe’ variables (timing varying from nominal expectation, energy loss in a tracking detector) the tails of which are not well simulated in the first place.
Luckily we can show that after our quality cuts, the main variables \( p, \beta \) and \( \beta \gamma \) are not correlated for background processes in the momentum range of interest. The background is mainly due to mis-reconstructed time and ionisation estimates, therefore the background can be simulated by combining these uncorrelated variables to produce a mass spectrum that trivially follows from \( m = p/\beta \gamma \).

To assure ourselves that this is a sound strategy we can measure the correlation between the variables, where we find an in general small linear correlation on the other of \( \mathcal{O}(1\%) \). Because we cut on \( \beta - \beta \gamma \) before generating the input histograms for the background estimator, fairly low statistics is available and we run a risk of oversampling. To avoid this we do not use fully orthogonal data samples where \( \beta_{|p<100\text{ GeV}} \) and \( p_{|\beta>100\text{ GeV}} \). Instead we sample the full \( \beta_{|p<100\text{ GeV}} \) and \( p_{|\beta>100\text{ GeV}} \) region.

We allow this as the \( p \)-spectrum effectively smears any low-lying \( \beta \) value. Also the final normalisation is done on a sideband below the signal region and not on the full spectrum, hereby avoiding any over estimation of the background at the potential cost of a signal hidden in the data.

Any way to show that \( p \) is independent of \( \beta \) and \( \beta \gamma \) is by comparing the spectrum where \( p < 100 \text{ GeV} \) but where \( \beta_{|p>100\text{ GeV}} \) and \( \beta \gamma_{|p>100\text{ GeV}} \), as we can see in Figure 9.24, they match pretty well. The implementation of the background estimation is made in such a way that it takes an \( \eta \)-dependence into account. As input we produce three histograms, \( p - \eta \), \( \beta - \eta \) and \( \beta \gamma - \eta \) shown in Figure 9.25.

Additionally we can produce the same spectra but for \( p > 100 \text{ GeV} \) for data (with a blinding for \( m > 500 \text{ GeV} \)) where the input to the background is \( p > 100 \text{ GeV} \) and \( \beta_{|p<100\text{ GeV}}, \beta \gamma_{|p<100\text{ GeV}} \), as we can see in Figure 9.24, they match pretty well. The implementation of the background estimation is made in such a way that it takes an \( \eta \)-dependence into account. As input we produce three histograms, \( p - \eta \), \( \beta - \eta \) and \( \beta \gamma - \eta \) shown in Figure 9.25.

The three histograms represents joint-pdfs, where for a set of mass estimates \( \{m_\beta, m_\beta \gamma\} \) the \( p - \eta \) distribution is sampled at random producing a joint estimate: \( \langle p, \eta \rangle \). The two estimator distributions are then profiled along \( \eta \) whereby a conditional pdf is produced for each variable, \( p(\beta | \eta) \), \( p(\beta \gamma | \eta) \). These pdfs are then sampled to give estimates of \( \beta \) and \( \beta \gamma \) that are
correlated in $\eta$ but uncorrelated with $p$. The three estimates $p_e, \beta \gamma, \beta_e$ are then combined to form two mass estimates:

$$m_\beta = \frac{p_e}{\beta_e \sqrt{1 - \beta_e^2}}, \quad m_{\beta \gamma} = \frac{p_e}{\beta \gamma}.$$

(9.35)

The estimates are filled into a 2D-histogram, representing the joint pdf for the background (Figures 9.26).

The procedure is parallelised using Python multiprocessing libraries wrapping a C++ ROOT kernel to speed up the process, as roughly $3 \times 10^7$ samplings are need to produce a realistic tail at high mass.

A problem with this technique is that very aggressive cuts on the input distributions leads to ‘spikes’ in the 2D mass distribution. This can be potentially avoided by parameterising the distributions $f(\beta_e, \beta \gamma, N)$ with Eureqa or another symbolic regression package. We avoid the problem by only using the integral of the 2D histogram and not the actual differential spectrum.

**Normalisation** The output contains many millions of candidates, we therefore normalise the distribution to data before use. This is done by scaling a sideband region with $50 < m_x < 150$ GeV to data in the same mass range.

**Injection test** We can inject a signal sample into the input data to test if the background estimator is sensitive to possible ‘contamination’ from a signal. Injecting a gluino sample with $m = 300$ GeV and $\sigma_{NLO} = 62.1$ pb into all the above histograms shows that the method is not sensitive to a signal as
we would still have a very large deviation from the generated background expectation even if a signal was found within the sample (figs. 9.27).

## 9.6 Treatment of Systematic Uncertainties

Any results from a measurement must be viewed in light of its limitations. Our search had multiple sources of systematic uncertainty. They can be attributed to intrinsic sources such as the scale of QCD phenomena at the LHC (ISR, FSR) and the uncertainty on the amount of integrated luminosity, as we don’t have an absolute luminosity measurement for ATLAS. The methodology applied in estimate speed from $dE/dx$ and ToF also carries uncertainties and last the overall signal efficiency carries a large uncertainty due to the phenomenological nature of the model. The relative uncertainty on the background estimate, the signal efficiency and the integrated luminosity is found summarised in table 9.11.

### Table 9.11: Systematic uncertainties on R-Hadrons in the 2011 ALTAS search. Ref. [111]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Relative uncertainty %</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Theoretical systematic uncertainty on signal cross section</td>
<td>15–30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Experimental uncertainty on signal efficiency</td>
<td>11.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Signal trigger efficiency</td>
<td>4.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>QCD uncertainties (ISR, FSR)</td>
<td>8.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Signal pre-selection efficiency</td>
<td>1.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Momentum resolution</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pixel $dE/dx$ calibration</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calo $\beta$ timing calibration</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MS $\beta$ timing calibration</td>
<td>3.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Offline $E_{T}^{miss}$ scale</td>
<td>7.3–4.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luminosity</td>
<td>3.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Experimental uncertainty on background estimate</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 9.6.1 Uncertainties in the theoretical cross section

The uncertainties on the theoretical cross section for MSSM SUSY production is calculated following the PDF4LHC recommendations outlined in Section 9.2.2. The uncertainty is 15% at masses around 100 GeV$/c^2$ increasing to roughly 30% for masses over 1 TeV$/c^2$.
9.6.2 Uncertainties in expected signal efficiency

The R-Hadrons signal efficiency had multiple sources of uncertainty. A systematic uncertainty attributable to a potential scale difference between the trigger efficiency for Monte Carlo simulation and data was studied by looking at the trigger onset curve (similar to Figure 9.16) for simulated and recorded $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ events. The trigger used ignores the muon spectrometer giving rise to a missing-$E_T$ signature from the invisible muons. The trigger turn-on curve was multiplied bin-by-bin by the true missing-$E_T$ to obtain the signal efficiency. The uncertainty was estimated by fitting the turn-on curve and varying the fitted parameters with $\pm 1\sigma$. The systematic uncertainty was found to be 4.5%.

The reliance on initial state and final state radiation in our trigger topology means that ISR and FSR is a source of uncertainty in a trigger context. To study the effect two R-Hadron $\bar{g}$ samples with $m = 1000$ GeV/$c^2$ where produced, one with an elevated level of radiation and one with a decreased. By subjecting the resulting Missing-$E_T$ spectrum for each of the samples to the trigger turn-on curve for our main trigger XE60_noMu a systematic uncertainty of 8.5% was found. The remaining signal uncertainties listed in Table 9.11 where found by comparing $Z \rightarrow \mu\mu$ MC to data.

Figure 9.27: Distributions where a gluino sample has been injected.
9.6.3 Uncertainties in background estimation

To a large extent the uncertainties attributed to Monte Carlo based background estimation are automatically negated by the purely data-driven approach described in Section 9.5. The method itself did introduce other sources of uncertainty, in particular the binning of the input histograms, which varied to see the effect and more adversely the lack of statistics in the same histograms when $\beta$ and $\beta\gamma$ cuts had been applied. The total uncertainty was found to be 15%.

9.6.4 Integrated luminosity

The systematic uncertainty on integrated luminosity was estimated centrally by the ATLAS collaboration and was found to be 3.9% at the time of the analysis (it was later revised to 1.8% [109]).

9.7 Statistical interpretation

In our analysis we have designed the experiment with the number of observed events as our estimator. In practice we are interested in a cross section estimate on a specific particle mass hypothesis. If we had a specific theory in mind, we could based on the estimated cross section falsify the theory, if the cross section found by analysis is lower or higher than expected by the theory.

In the general case of LLPs we are less worried about specific model exclusion and separates our measurement into two cases based on the p-value for the background-only hypothesis. If we define a control region based on the statistical significance $\alpha$, we say that the background-only hypothesis is excluded if $p < \alpha$, that is, we have a discovery.

Convention requires $p_{\text{bkg}} < 5.733 \times 10^{-7}$ to claim discovery of something in excess of the background only hypothesis in particle physics. On the other hand exclusion of a signal hypothesis requires a less stringent $p_{\text{sig}} < 0.05$ or what we call a 95% confidence level (CL) exclusion.

This brings us to the main topic of this chapter, namely how to interpret a model that has been excluded as $p_{\text{sig}} < \alpha$ where $\alpha = 0.05$. An exclusion at $\alpha = 0.05$ begs the question what is the largest possible cross section (or number of signal events) not excluded by the confidence level, this upper limit is the number we quote as the largest possible value given the pre-specified coverage of our test.

To find the upper limit on the cross section we must define a statistical model that represent our measurement along with its uncertainties. We model the expectation with a likelihood function that assumes a Poissonian probability on the number of observed events together with Gaussian distributions for each of the systematic uncertainties. To make the model as simple as possible we note that we have uncertainties on the signal efficiency ($\delta_\varepsilon$) and background expectation ($\delta_b$) together with a global uncertainty on the integrated luminosity ($\delta_L$) from Sec. 9.6. The model is then defined by the
SEARCH FOR LONG-LIVED COLOURED PARTICLES IN ATLAS WITH 2011 LHC DATA

likelihood:

$$\mathcal{L}(\sigma; \delta_e, \delta_b, \delta_L) = \mathcal{L}(\sigma; \hat{\theta}(\sigma)) = \text{Pois}(n|\mu).N\left(\nu_e \sqrt{\delta_e^2 + \delta_L^2}\right).N\left(\nu_b|\delta_b\right),$$

where \( \mu = \sigma L \epsilon v_e + b v_b. \)

In (9.36) \( \hat{\theta}(\sigma) \) is the vector of nuisance parameters, \( n \) is the number of observed events, \( \sigma \) the effective cross section (in pb), \( L \) is the integrated luminosity (in pb\(^{-1}\)), \( \epsilon \) is the signal efficiency and \( b \) is the number of expected background events.

If we express the background hypothesis as \( L(0, \hat{\theta}(\sigma = 0)) \) and the signal+background hypothesis as \( L(\sigma, \hat{\theta}(\sigma)) \), then the \( p \)-value is found by the following prescription.

A likelihood ratio \( \lambda(\sigma) \) is defined as

$$\lambda(\sigma) = \frac{\mathcal{L}(\sigma, \hat{\theta})}{\mathcal{L}(\hat{\sigma}, \hat{\theta})}$$

(9.37)

The ‘hats’ \(^\hat{}\) denote that the nuisance parameters have been profiled\(^4\) \( \hat{\theta} \) are the Maximum Likelihood Estimate (MLE) fits that maximises \( \mathcal{L} \) for a given cross section \( \sigma \), whereas \( \hat{\sigma} \) and \( \hat{\theta} \) are the parameters that maximises the likelihood if \( \sigma \) is left as a free parameter. This construction, called a profile likelihood ratio is used as part of a test statistic defined as

$$t_\sigma = -2\ln \lambda(\sigma)$$

(9.38)

The test statistic \( t_\sigma \) is a measure of the disagreement between the signal hypothesis and data (as \( \lambda \to 1 \) when \( \hat{\sigma} \to \sigma \)). \( t_\sigma \) is then sampled by generating toy Monte Carlo experiments with a specific cross section to form a pdf \( f(q_\sigma|\sigma, \hat{\theta}(\sigma, \text{obs})) \) where \( \hat{\theta}(\sigma, \text{obs}) \) is the conditional MLE assuming \( n = \text{obs} \).

With \( f(t_\sigma) \) we can calculate the \( p \)-value of the signal+background expectation

$$p_\sigma = \int_{t_\sigma, \text{obs}}^\infty f(q_\sigma|\sigma, \hat{\theta}(\sigma, \text{obs}))dt_\sigma.$$  

(9.39)

To form an upper limit based on (9.39) we must find the cross section that satisfies \( p_{\sigma}^{up} = 0.05 \), this is usually done by scanning a region of expected cross sections (e.g. \( 0, k(n-bkg) \) with \( k \) as a fudge factor).

This limit is called CL\(_{s+b}\) as it is calculated for the combined expectation to both signal and background. In the eventuality that the background is much larger than the expected signal, an observed downward fluctuation in background can lead to excessively tight limits on the cross section. This means that an experiment can claim tighter upper limits than justified by the experimental sensitivity simply due to the combined s+b assumption in (9.39).

This effect is undesirable and to avoid it we can normalise with a background-only hypothesis \( p_0 \)

$$p_b = 1 - \int_{0, \text{obs}}^\infty f(q_0|0, \hat{\theta}(0, \text{obs}))dt_0.$$  

(9.40)

\(^4\) Profiling likelihoods essentially is a way to find the maximum likelihood of a multi-dimensional parameter space by reducing the number of parameters by fixing one parameter and integrating another assuming a conditional value for the fixed. The method is not as precise as a full maximum likelihood of all dimensions but is much faster i.e. practical.
where the same test statistic is used but the cross section is $\sigma = 0$.

The effective $p$-value is then a ratio between the two

$$p'_a = \frac{p_{s+b}}{1-p_b}$$

(9.41)

which is scanned in the same manner as (9.39) to find the upper limit on the cross section given $p'_a = 0.05$. This result is called the CL$_s$ upper limit, and is in practice a more robust but also more conservative limit than the CL$_{s+b}$ (see Figure 9.28 for a comparison).

### 9.8 Results

Applying the statistical method outlined in the previous chapter to the result from the analysis brings us to the concluding results. We found that in general the observed number of events where compatible with the expected background rate within uncertainties. Instead of quoting $p$-values we went on to set upper limits on the production cross section. This thesis has emphasised the gluino-induced R-Hadrons and Split-Supersymmetry but our result covered two additional R-Hadron configurations based on $\tilde{t}$ and $\tilde{b}$ squarks. The results are summarised in limit plots illustrating the upper limit on the production cross section for each of the tested mass hypotheses (Figures 9.29 and 9.30). Due to the cumulative chance of charge flips a search ignoring any muon spectrometer was designed as well as a search including muon spectrometer measurements if they were available. Both strategies have their advantages. The MS Agnostic search has poorer background rejection but better signal sensitivity while the opposite is true for the MS Inclusive search.

In Figure 9.32 and 9.31 the counting region for two of the tested signal hypotheses are shown. Summing all entries within the bounded region to the top right gives the number of observed events in the signal region.
Comparing with the expected production cross section for decoupled gluinos in MSSM (which emulates SSUSY) it is possible to place a lower mass exclusion limit on long-lived sparticle pairs.

The overall upper limit on cross section is on the order of $\sim 0.01$ pb for all hypotheses. In comparison with a specific model prediction (PROSPINO, mass splitting scale 10 TeV) we can estimate lower limits on the mass of each hypothesis. The resulting limit on the gluino mass for the full (muon spectrometer agnostic) selection is approximately $985 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ ($989 \text{ GeV}/c^2$) at 95% C.L. as can be inferred from Figures 9.29a, 9.30a. For sbottoms the
Table 9.12: Counts for gluinos - Full detector

\[
\begin{array}{cccccccc}
\text{\(m_{\tilde{g}}\)} & \text{Signal Eff.} & \text{Exp. Bkg} & \text{Obs. Data} & \text{Exp. Limit} & +1\sigma & -1\sigma & \text{Obs. Limit} \\
\text{[GeV/c}^2]\text{]} & & & & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \\
200 & 0.113 & 131.183 & 135 & 0.089 & 0.128 & 0.065 & 0.094 \\
300 & 0.126 & 18.691 & 15 & 0.019 & 0.028 & 0.014 & 0.015 \\
400 & 0.138 & 5.178 & 3 & 0.010 & 0.014 & 0.007 & 0.007 \\
500 & 0.144 & 1.751 & 2 & 0.006 & 0.009 & 0.005 & 0.007 \\
600 & 0.136 & 0.557 & 1 & 0.005 & 0.007 & 0.004 & 0.006 \\
700 & 0.134 & 0.294 & 1 & 0.005 & 0.006 & 0.004 & 0.006 \\
800 & 0.126 & 0.148 & 1 & 0.005 & 0.005 & 0.005 & 0.007 \\
900 & 0.109 & 0.165 & 1 & 0.006 & 0.006 & 0.005 & 0.008 \\
1000 & 0.102 & 0.056 & 1 & 0.006 & 0.006 & 0.005 & 0.006 \\
1100 & 0.093 & 0.036 & 1 & 0.007 & 0.007 & 0.006 & 0.009 \\
1200 & 0.084 & 0.043 & 1 & 0.007 & 0.008 & 0.007 & 0.010 \\
1300 & 0.069 & 0.020 & 1 & 0.009 & 0.009 & 0.008 & 0.009 \\
1400 & 0.063 & 0.014 & 0 & 0.009 & 0.010 & 0.009 & 0.009 \\
\end{array}
\]

For stops:

Table 9.13: Counts for stops - Full detector

\[
\begin{array}{cccccccc}
\text{\(m_{\tilde{t}}\)} & \text{Signal Eff.} & \text{Exp. Bkg} & \text{Obs. Data} & \text{Exp. Limit} & +1\sigma & -1\sigma & \text{Obs. Limit} \\
\text{[GeV/c}^2]\text{]} & & & & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \\
200 & 0.152 & 128.364 & 122 & 0.064 & 0.094 & 0.046 & 0.058 \\
300 & 0.180 & 21.950 & 18 & 0.015 & 0.021 & 0.010 & 0.012 \\
400 & 0.192 & 4.647 & 4 & 0.006 & 0.010 & 0.005 & 0.006 \\
500 & 0.215 & 2.036 & 2 & 0.004 & 0.006 & 0.003 & 0.004 \\
600 & 0.214 & 0.594 & 2 & 0.003 & 0.004 & 0.003 & 0.004 \\
700 & 0.213 & 0.413 & 1 & 0.003 & 0.004 & 0.003 & 0.004 \\
800 & 0.219 & 0.260 & 1 & 0.003 & 0.004 & 0.003 & 0.004 \\
900 & 0.196 & 0.212 & 1 & 0.003 & 0.004 & 0.003 & 0.004 \\
\end{array}
\]

For sbottoms:

Table 9.14: Counts for sbottoms - Full detector

\[
\begin{array}{cccccccc}
\text{\(m_{\tilde{b}}\)} & \text{Signal Eff.} & \text{Exp. Bkg} & \text{Obs. Data} & \text{Exp. Limit} & +1\sigma & -1\sigma & \text{Obs. Limit} \\
\text{[GeV/c}^2]\text{]} & & & & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \\
200 & 0.068 & 97.112 & 94 & 0.114 & 0.164 & 0.080 & 0.107 \\
300 & 0.089 & 21.978 & 18 & 0.030 & 0.043 & 0.021 & 0.023 \\
400 & 0.101 & 6.295 & 5 & 0.014 & 0.020 & 0.010 & 0.012 \\
500 & 0.102 & 1.405 & 2 & 0.008 & 0.012 & 0.006 & 0.010 \\
600 & 0.110 & 0.860 & 2 & 0.007 & 0.010 & 0.006 & 0.010 \\
700 & 0.108 & 0.320 & 1 & 0.006 & 0.008 & 0.005 & 0.008 \\
800 & 0.109 & 0.265 & 1 & 0.006 & 0.007 & 0.005 & 0.008 \\
900 & 0.108 & 0.250 & 1 & 0.006 & 0.007 & 0.005 & 0.008 \\
\end{array}
\]

For gluinos:

Table 9.15: Counts for gluinos - Agnostic

\[
\begin{array}{cccccccc}
\text{\(m_{\tilde{g}}\)} & \text{Signal Eff.} & \text{Exp. Bkg} & \text{Obs. Data} & \text{Exp. Limit} & +1\sigma & -1\sigma & \text{Obs. Limit} \\
\text{[GeV/c}^2]\text{]} & & & & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \text{[pb]} & \\
300 & 0.059 & 22.154 & 17 & 0.044 & 0.059 & 0.032 & 0.033 \\
400 & 0.062 & 2.073 & 0 & 0.012 & 0.014 & 0.010 & 0.009 \\
500 & 0.079 & 0.739 & 0 & 0.008 & 0.010 & 0.007 & 0.007 \\
600 & 0.078 & 0.666 & 0 & 0.008 & 0.009 & 0.007 & 0.007 \\
700 & 0.083 & 1.089 & 0 & 0.008 & 0.010 & 0.007 & 0.007 \\
800 & 0.080 & 0.847 & 0 & 0.009 & 0.011 & 0.007 & 0.011 \\
900 & 0.070 & 0.049 & 0 & 0.008 & 0.009 & 0.008 & 0.008 \\
1000 & 0.073 & 0.200 & 0 & 0.008 & 0.009 & 0.008 & 0.008 \\
1100 & 0.070 & 0.368 & 0 & 0.008 & 0.010 & 0.008 & 0.008 \\
1200 & 0.061 & 0.200 & 0 & 0.010 & 0.011 & 0.009 & 0.010 \\
1300 & 0.055 & 0.200 & 0 & 0.011 & 0.011 & 0.010 & 0.010 \\
1400 & 0.053 & 0.008 & 0 & 0.010 & 0.011 & 0.010 & 0.010 \\
1500 & 0.046 & 0.200 & 0 & 0.013 & 0.014 & 0.013 & 0.013 \\
\end{array}
\]

lower mass limit is 612 GeV/c^2 (618 GeV/c^2) and for stops: 683 GeV/c^2 (657 GeV/c^2) (Figure 9.29b, 9.30b)

These limits include the discussed systematic uncertainties on the signal cross section and efficiency (∼14% depending on mass point as described
in section 9.6) as well as on the data-driven background estimate uncertainty (15%), as described above.

In the next chapter these results are compared with SSUSY to guide further searches at higher collision energies.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>0.039</td>
<td>103.864</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>0.208</td>
<td>0.301</td>
<td>0.150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300</td>
<td>0.070</td>
<td>15.304</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.028</td>
<td>0.037</td>
<td>0.021</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400</td>
<td>0.086</td>
<td>3.124</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500</td>
<td>0.095</td>
<td>0.851</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600</td>
<td>0.108</td>
<td>0.692</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700</td>
<td>0.102</td>
<td>0.899</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.006</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800</td>
<td>0.106</td>
<td>1.432</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900</td>
<td>0.102</td>
<td>0.071</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>0.100</td>
<td>0.728</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.006</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 9.16: Counts for stops - Agnostic

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>106.208</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>0.339</td>
<td>0.487</td>
<td>0.241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300</td>
<td>0.047</td>
<td>25.450</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.067</td>
<td>0.039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>2.829</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.021</td>
<td>0.030</td>
<td>0.015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500</td>
<td>0.060</td>
<td>0.931</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600</td>
<td>0.063</td>
<td>0.397</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>700</td>
<td>0.065</td>
<td>0.188</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>800</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.115</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>0.009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>900</td>
<td>0.066</td>
<td>0.705</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.039</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.008</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 9.17: Counts for sbottoms - Agnostic

Figure 9.31: Final selection plane for a $\tilde{g}$ with $m = 600$ GeV$/c^2$. The axes are reconstructed mass based on Calorimeter and MS $\beta$ along the $x$-axis and Pixel $\beta\gamma$ based mass along the $y$-axis. The dotted lines are the 90% signal coverage bounds, everything within that region is counted and listed in table 9.8.
Figure 9.32: Final selection plane for a $\tilde{t}$ with $m = 300$ GeV/$c^2$. The axes are reconstructed mass based on Calorimeter and MS $\beta$ along the x-axis and Pixel $\beta\gamma$ based mass along the y-axis. The dotted lines are the 90% signal coverage bounds, everything within that region is counted and listed in table 9.13.
IV Prospects for future searches with ATLAS at the LHC
Future searches for Long-lived particles at the Large Hadron Collider

This thesis documents searches performed with the LHC at its very first years of operation. This initial period has been exceptionally accommodating for orthogonal studies such as these that requires deep levels of access to sensor data and run conditions favouring long event windows. The design specifications for the LHC and its experiments define much tighter operations where the tolerances are tightened to maximise collision rates with the assumption that everything directly measurable with the detectors are relativistic SM remnants and not slow massive exotica. In this chapter I will explore the phenomenological side of the search for LLPs in particular SSUSY R-Hadrons, and let the technical challenges of this new mode of operation be left to future analysts. To set the scene the next section will sketch the changes awaiting us.

10.1 The LHC in 2015

During the runs in 2010-2012 the LHC was crippled due to misconnected superconducting splices between the bending magnets. With the first Long Shutdown (LS1) in 2013-2014 these connections will be repaired and the current expectations is to start collisions at $\sqrt{s} = 13$ TeV in April 2015. While the actual beam configuration is still being decided preliminary studies suggest the values listed in table 10.1. A key uncertainty is the bunch spacing. It has dramatic consequences for the experiments as well as the accelerator whether it will continue with 50 ns or be decreased to the design value of 25 ns. This naturally also have consequences for the time dependent search for slow moving LLPs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parameter</th>
<th>2011</th>
<th>2012</th>
<th>2015</th>
<th>Nominal</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beam energy [TeV]</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peak luminosity [$L=10^{33}$ cm$^{-2}$s$^{-1}$]</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>6.6</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Integrated luminosity per year</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bunch Intensity [$10^{10}$p]</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>11.5</td>
<td>11.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Number of bunches per beam</td>
<td>1380</td>
<td>1380</td>
<td>2508</td>
<td>2808</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bunch Spacing [ns]</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Normalised transverse emittance [$\mu$m]</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>3.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\beta^*$ at collision in ATLAS [m]</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Average number of processes per crossing [$\mu$]</td>
<td>9.1</td>
<td>20.7</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>25.60</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 10.1: LHC parameters. (Ref. [44, 25]).
The luminosity evolution is so far planned to add around $50 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ a year (Figure 10.1). The plan is to collect around $300 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ before the next shutdown LS2.

10.1.1 ATLAS LS1 upgrades

The experiments are not waiting idle while the LHC is being repaired. Nearly all systems in ATLAS are being repaired and upgraded during the shutdown. Many of these changes have implications for the LLP searches as they are very dependent on subtle features of each detector. Any in-depth review is beyond the scope of this section but some of the major changes are

- **Beam pipes** are being replaced. This means that the study described in Section 10.3 can be started.

- **Insertable B-layer** A major upgrade is a new $b$-layer inserted around a smaller beam pipe. The IBL will sit at $r = 33 \text{ mm}$ inside the old pixel $b$-layer. This upgrade is likely going to improve $dE/dx$ and give precise vertex determination.

- **Pixel** Recovery of sensors now 99% are back online from 95%.

- **SCT** Back end electronic now capable of handling up to 90 simultaneous pileup events.

- **TRT** leaks fixed, resuming operation with a xenon mixture (Sec. 6.2.3) enabling electron PID.

- **LAr Calorimeter** decreasing DAQ sampling from 5 to 4 samples per readout. This could affect the time and energy resolution for LAr ToF and $dE/dx$.

- **Muon Spectrometer** major repairs all around and new chambers increasing acceptance

To really gauge what consequences the LS1 has on LLP searches full simulations must be performed, but based on the figures in Chapters 8 and 7 the time window need not be must larger than the nominal for signals to be detected at $\beta < 1$. 
10.2 Future sensitivity to Split-Supersymmetry with ATLAS

The plans for the LHC assumes the production 45fb$^{-1}$ at $\sqrt{s} = 13$ TeV in 2015. The very preliminary plans also states that 300fb$^{-1}$ should be collected before the next long shutdown LS3 in 2021. We hope that the energy will be ramped to the nominal 14 TeV in 2016 and onwards. These scenarios are the basic assumptions for the results in this section.

To estimate the gluino pair production at 13 TeV it was necessary to produce an approximate cross section function based on 7, 8 and 14 TeV estimates, as 13 TeV was not yet an option available in the PROSPINO NLO programme used for such predictions. The function was found by producing between 100 and 200 cross section estimates for masses ranging from 100 to 7000 GeV for each of the three available collision energies. The data points where then extracted and a model was found by using the Eureqa application for symbolic regression. The resulting function which is independent of $m_{\tilde{g}}$ (see Figure 10.2) was found to be

$$\sigma(E_{cm}, m_{\tilde{g}}) = \exp\left(\frac{m_{\tilde{g}}(0.7E_{cm} - 13.7m_{\tilde{g}} + 5195)}{m_{\tilde{g}}(0.06E_{cm} + m_{\tilde{g}} + 636) - 28060} - \frac{16m_{\tilde{g}}}{E_{cm} - 1.6m_{\tilde{g}} + 113.5}\right) \quad (10.1)$$

The expression is valid until $\frac{16m_{\tilde{g}}}{E_{cm} - 1.6m_{\tilde{g}} + 113.5} > 0$. The fit spans many orders of magnitude (Figure 10.3) but is fairly consistent with and captures 99.93% of the input ($R^2 = 0.9983$).

Based on this cross section estimate and the projected statistics it is possible to estimate how many gluino pairs will be produced in the datasets.

$$N = \int \mathcal{L} \, dt \sigma_{\tilde{g}} \epsilon$$ \quad (10.2)

In Figure 10.4 the black horizontal line is the threshold for single-pair production. For 13 TeV this threshold is reached at 2738 GeV/$c^2$. A likely signal efficiency $\epsilon$ is around 10% which lowers the threshold to 2253 GeV/$c^2$. 

![Figure 10.2: PROSPINO 2.1](image1)

![Figure 10.3: Cross section estimates for pair produced gluinos at pp colliders with collision energies ranging from 7 to 14 TeV.](image2)
Figure 10.4: Expected number of gluino pairs produced in the various datasets produced and projected.

10.2.1 The high mass scale and gluino lifetimes

All searches to date have placed limits on gluino R-Hadron production in terms of their production cross section assuming the particles to be stable. Looking back at Figure 3.3 we note that the mass of the gluino is not the only constraining parameter of SSUSY. The mass scale $m_S$ is with the discovery of the Higgs particle constrained to be $< 10^7 \text{GeV}/c^2$. This limits the lifetime of the SSUSY gluino by remembering that the lifetime is related to the gluino mass and $m_S$ by

$$\tau_{\tilde{g}} = \left(\frac{\text{TeV}}{m_{\tilde{g}}}\right)^5 \left(\frac{m_S}{10^9 \text{GeV}/c^2}\right)^4 4s.$$  \hspace{1cm} (10.3)

Depending on the size of $m_S$ we will see different event signatures in ATLAS. By having searches that are sensitive to full detector-stable particles and gradually assumes stability at smaller radii we can exclude SSUSY $m_S$ space by placing upper cross section limits on LLPs with a minimum assumed survival distance $\tau_{\tilde{g}}c\beta\gamma$.

From Figure 10.5 we see that for a gluino with a mass of 1 TeV/$c^2$ the life-time is less than a $\mu$s. To understand what that means in terms of travel length and hence detector acceptance in ATLAS, we can calculate the particles average decay-length as a function of the SUSY breaking scale

$$d = c\tau\beta\gamma$$  \hspace{1cm} (10.4)

It is useful to define certain physics scenarios based on specific systems in ATLAS. In Table 10.2 six representative scenarios are listed that gradually requires the gluino to have track-like nature at longer and longer times. The invariant mass study effectively is a classic SUSY study where the decay modes are as described in Sec. 3.2.4. Displaced vertices can be found by the tracking systems from distances defined by the vertex resolution and out. The search strategy changes to a kinked-track search at moderate distances. The inner detector search is an implicit search in the sense that the gluino must be track-like throughout the tracking volume but no further assumptions...
are made about the tracks fate in the calorimeters and onwards. The same strategy is applied in the calorimeter range searches where the gluino must be track-like in the majority of the calorimeter volume as well as the inner tracker volume. The muon spectrometer search additionally requires a track in the muon spectrometer. The last case is particularly interesting in the case that the particle is stuck within the ATLAS detector and decays out of time with the ordinary events. A lifetime measurement in that case requires some correlation between the decay vertex and all former tracks extrapolated to that place, making the extraction of a lifetime very challenging data wise. In this study each of these searches have a defined radius where the system that must have a track signature is ending (Table 10.2).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>$d$ [mm]</th>
<th>$\tau_{\text{min}}$ [µs]</th>
<th>$d/\beta\gamma\vert_{\beta\gamma&lt;3}$</th>
<th>$d/\beta\gamma\vert_{\beta\gamma&lt;0.1}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Invariant mass</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>--</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Displaced vertex</td>
<td>$4 &lt; r_{\text{DV}} &lt; 180$</td>
<td>$4.5 \times 10^{-6}$</td>
<td>0.0001</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inner detector range</td>
<td>1106</td>
<td>0.0012</td>
<td>0.0369</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hadronic calorimeter</td>
<td>4250</td>
<td>0.0047</td>
<td>0.1418</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muon spectrometer</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>0.0112</td>
<td>0.3336</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trapped R-Hadron decays</td>
<td>$\leq 10000$</td>
<td>$&gt;0$</td>
<td>$&gt;0$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Particle identification is in general only possible if $0.1 < \beta\gamma < 3.0$ in the ATLAS detectors. This constrains the minimum mean lifetime to $\tau_{\text{min}}$ in table 10.2. By further combining the mean lifetimes with (10.3) and specific $\beta\gamma$ values for masses $m_{\tilde{g}}$ it is possible to estimate which regions of the detector is capable of excluding $m_S$ ranges.

10.2.2 Gluino speeds at various production energies

As the LLPs travel significantly slower than the speed of light we should estimate what the average speeds of a gluino produced at a specific $\sqrt{s}$ is likely to have, as this affects the travel distance before decay.

With the R-Hadron code in Pythia 8 20k events for 20 mass points between 100 and 2000 GeV where produced at $\sqrt{s} = 7, 8, 13, 14$ TeV. The
mean $\beta$ for these datasets where fitted with Eureqa to produce a parameterisation

$$\beta(E_{cm}, m_{\tilde{g}}) = \frac{0.7787 m_{\tilde{g}}}{E_{cm}} - 1.26 \sqrt{\frac{m_{\tilde{g}}}{E_{cm} - m_{\tilde{g}}}} + 0.908. \quad (10.5)$$

The pythia results are plotted on top of the equation in Figure 10.6.

![Figure 10.6: Mean $\beta$ for pair produced gluinos at various centre of mass energies. The dots are Monte Carlo simulated with Pythia 8. The lines represent a parameterisation described in the text.](image)

With the expected speed of the gluino and the expected lifetime at each gluino mass point, we can calculate an average travel distance for each mass hypothesis with (10.4).

The plot in Figure 10.7 above summaries the ATLAS analyses presented in this thesis. The overall axes are the gluino mass and the splitting mass scale with the contour lines being the average distance before decay of the gluino. The coloured regions represent the excluded areas where the upper limit on the cross section is smaller than the predicted gluino production cross section for that given mass. The lower bound on these regions comes implicitly from how far in ATLAS they must travel to be reconstructed as a long-lived particle. The 2011 analysis (the main subject of this thesis) is segmented into three areas, one where only the inner detector is utilised, one where only the ID and Calorimeters are used and lastly one where the muon spectrometer is included as well. The mass exclusion of the latter two are comparable but the squark mass exclusion gains a bit by the shorter distance to the calorimeter. For the inner detector background rejection is an issue, this can be seen on the slightly lower mass exclusion. The squark mass scale on the other hand is reduced significantly. The distances must be taken with a pinch of salt, as the detector geometry is not spherical around the interaction point, and the life-time is following an exponential rather than a Gaussian distribution, nevertheless the plot gives an idea about the true coverage of this kind of analysis. Cosmological constraints seems somewhat irrelevant now as the discovery of a Higgs around 125 GeV limits the life-time of the gluino to mere microseconds.
Figure 10.7: Current SSUSY limits and possible reach of the ATLAS detector at various statistics. The detector regions illustrate which analysis strategy matches a \( \{m_S, m_{\tilde{g}}\} \) scenario. The 2011 search is divided into three independent analyses one relying on the inner detector only, one relying on the muons spectrometer and tracker only and a final analysis that also utilises possible matched tracks in the muon spectrometer. Only lifetimes are accounted for, not energy loss. The stopped R-Hadron search assumes that the R-Hadrons stops anywhere in the ATLAS volume and decays after \( 10^{-6} \) s, which is the lower acceptance in the search presented in [110].
The problem of magnetic monopoles has deep roots in theoretical physics. It is one of the most glaringly obvious broken symmetries in our world, the asymmetry between magnetic and electric charges. Magnetic monopoles are predicted by numerous theories [90] and has continued to intrigue theoretical physicists and evade experimental physicists for nearly 100 years. It is not my intention to introduce nor motivate magnetic monopoles further, see the reference above for an introduction to the subject. The question is rather, if these monopoles exists and are produced at the LHC, where would we in all likelihood find them\(^1\). Further, if they are sufficiently charged are there then a change that we would miss them with our detectors as the beam pipe itself would be opaque to them? This study is meant as a strategic pointer to where we would most economically collect samples of said beam pipe if it was available for analysis. The analysis itself can be carried out by scanning samples of the beam pipe material with a super conducting magnetometer as described in [83, 45]. The assumptions here are that the monopoles are effectively stable with lifetimes sufficient for sample accumulation during accelerator operation and proceeding analysis \(\tau \sim 5\text{s}\). Earlier such works have been done in a more general context of the entire detectors at the LHC [84], this study is focusing on the beam-pipe itself as it is available for analysis after the LS1 where the installation of the IBL prompts a replacement of the beam-pipe with a smaller one.

### 10.3.1 Simulating trapped magnetic monopoles

If magnetic monopoles exist with Dirac charges \(g_D\) it would mean that a unit of magnetic charge corresponds to an electric charge of \(g_D = 137e/2\). The amount of energy loss due to ionisation in matter would be significantly larger [45] for such a particle than for particles with known electric charges \(\mathcal{O}(1e)\).

\[
-\langle dE/dx \rangle = KZg^2e [\ln(2m_e^2\beta^2\gamma^2/I_m) + K(|g|) + B(|g|)]
\]

(10.6)

Here \(I_m\) is the mean ionisation potential which for magnetic monopoles can be expressed in terms of the usual \(I_e\) as \(I_m = I_e \exp (-D/2)\), where \(D(Al) = 0.056\). The charged dependent \(K(|g|) = 0.406\) and \(B(|g|) = 0.248\) for \(g_D = 1\). The remaining terms have the same meaning as for the Bethe-Bloch formula in section 4.1.2.

Proportional energy loss as a function of the speed of the particle differs from the regular Bethe-Bloch formula by not scaling with \(1/\beta^2\). This means that the ionisation loss is proportional to the speed of the particle, and highly energetic monopoles will lose the most energy per unit distance traverse in matter (Figure 10.8). A study done by [84] has found that for sufficiently energetic (or charged) magnetic monopoles even the beam pipe constitutes enough material to trap the particles.

**Equations of motion** The transport equation for magnetic monopoles requires a modification as the Lorentz force is acting inversely for magnetic...
By introducing \( \hat{\vec{r}} \) to obtain \( \vec{s} \) length particles. An effect of this is that the solenoidal magnetic field immersing the inner detector will act as a longitudinal accelerator for any magnetically charged particles.

By applying the chain rule we can rephrase (10.7) in terms of trajectory length \( s \) instead of time \( t \)

\[
\frac{d\vec{p}}{ds} = \frac{d\vec{p}}{dr} \frac{dr}{ds} = \frac{d\vec{p}}{dr} \frac{1}{v} = \frac{\vec{F}}{v} \tag{10.8}
\]

to obtain

\[
\frac{d\vec{p}}{ds} = \left[ q_e \left( \vec{E} + \frac{\vec{v}}{c} \times \vec{B} \right) + q_m \left( \vec{B} - \frac{\vec{v}}{c} \times \vec{E} \right) \right] ds / v. \tag{10.9}
\]

which we for the individual components become

\[
\frac{d\vec{p}}{ds} = \left( \begin{array}{c}
q_e \left( \frac{B_y v_x - B_x v_y}{c} + E_x \right) + q_m \left( B_x + \frac{v_x E_y - v_y E_x}{c} \right) \\
q_e \left( \frac{B_z v_y - B_y v_z}{c} + E_y \right) + q_m \left( B_y + \frac{v_y E_z - v_z E_y}{c} \right) \\
q_e \left( \frac{B_x v_z - B_z v_x}{c} + E_z \right) + q_m \left( B_z + \frac{v_z E_x - v_x E_z}{c} \right)
\end{array} \right). \tag{10.10}
\]

By introducing \( \hat{\vec{e}} = \vec{v} / |\vec{v}| = \vec{p} / |\vec{p}| \) we get the classic representation,

\[
\frac{d\vec{e}}{ds} = \left( \begin{array}{c}
\frac{q_e}{c p} (B_x e_y - B_y e_x) + B_x q_m + \frac{q_m}{c p} (E_x e_y - E_y e_x) + E_x q_e \\
\frac{q_e}{c p} (B_y e_z - B_z e_y) + B_y q_m + \frac{q_m}{c p} (E_y e_z - E_z e_y) + E_y q_e \\
\frac{q_e}{c p} (B_z e_x - B_x e_z) + B_z q_m + \frac{q_m}{c p} (E_z e_x - E_x e_z) + E_z q_e
\end{array} \right) \cdot ds \tag{10.11}
\]

If no electric fields are present the equations reduces to

\[
\frac{d\vec{e}}{ds} = \left( \begin{array}{c}
\frac{q_e}{c p} (B_y e_x - B_x e_y) + q_m B_x \\
\frac{q_e}{c p} (B_z e_y - B_y e_z) + q_m B_y \\
\frac{q_e}{c p} (B_x e_z - B_z e_x) + q_m B_z
\end{array} \right) \cdot ds. \tag{10.12}
\]
These equations allow us to implement a transport code that simulates the behaviour of a magnetically charged particle in a magnetic field. Together with (10.6) this serves as the dynamics of a toy-Monte Carlo implemented to estimate where monopoles could be trapped in the beam pipe.

**Implementing a monopole simulator** The actual implementation is done in python with PyROOT as visualisation backend for effective debugging. The algorithm works as follows.

- A point in phase-space is emulated by sampling a point in a $\{\eta, p_T\}$ distribution generated based on the R-Hadron phase space for the specific mass of the monopole.

- The monopole is now defined by $\{g, q, mass, \eta, p_T\}$ and ejected from coordinate $\{0,0,0\}$.

- To propagate the monopole (10.13) is solved by the Runge-Kutta-Fehlberg method [46] which adaptively changes the step side $ds$ depending on the error between a Runge-Kutta $O(4)$ and RK $O(5)$ estimate. The relative error must not exceed $10^{-5}$ if that happens the step size $ds$ is decreased to a minimum of $ds_{min} = 10^{-10}$ mm.

- For each step (10.13) is calculated if the particle is within the volume of the solenoidal field of ATLAS defined to be $|z| < 2.65$ m, $\sqrt{x^2 + y^2} <= 2.46$ m. Within the volume the field is 2 T.

- If the monopole is within the material of the beam pipe $34.3$ mm $\geq \sqrt{x^2 + y^2} \geq 29$ mm then the momentum change is corrected by (10.6). If the monopole is a ‘Dyon’ carrying electric charge as well the Vavilov $dE/dx$ is subtracted (4.1.2).

- The result is returned to the RK solver as a $dp/ds$ estimate which is then applied to update $\{g, q, mass, \eta, p_T\}$.

- if the maximum propagation length of 50 m is reached, or the speed of the particle is less than $\beta < 0.02$ then the simulation is terminated.

- The output is all iteration steps along with current momentum and time.

Figure 10.9 is a visualisation produced from the simulation. The white lines are independent tracks produced by $g = 15gD$ monopoles. The coloured dots are points where $dE/dx > 10$ MeV, the colour is proportional to the speed of the particle where red means $\beta \sim 0$ and blue is $\beta \sim 1$.

The simulation is limited by assuming the beam-pipe to be a simple tube, the magnetic field to be ideal and uniform and not least the energy depositions to be the mean value rather than Landau distributed. The phase space of the monopoles is also a source of uncertainty. With these caveats the results are but an illustration of the method and further studies can and should be undertaking to validate the claims below.
10.3.2 Most probable positions of trapped monopoles

The results in table 10.3 is produced by varying the charge $g = n g_D$ and the mass at each charge point. 5000 particles where simulated at each mass-charge point. The result is measured by counting all particles that stopped in the beam-pipe region due to energy loss.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Mass [GeV/$c^2$]</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>10</th>
<th>15</th>
<th>20</th>
<th>30</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>600</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0266</td>
<td>0.3042</td>
<td>0.8872</td>
<td>0.8172</td>
<td>0.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>0.0004</td>
<td>0.0092</td>
<td>0.1252</td>
<td>0.223</td>
<td>0.8498</td>
<td>0.9614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1500</td>
<td>0.0006</td>
<td>0.0078</td>
<td>0.0594</td>
<td>0.3214</td>
<td>0.573</td>
<td>0.8102</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 10.3 show that the relationship between mass and charge is not trivial. We expect the range to be shorter in matter for particles with large charge. We would also expect that particles with large charges and smaller masses to be deflected more strongly in the magnetic field. In Figure 10.10 we see that high-charge samples do in fact ‘range out’ before the ones with less charge. The strict ordering comes from applying only the mean value (10.6) and not stochastic energy losses, this is illustrative when we want to study the basic trend.

The question raised in the beginning of this section was, where along the beam-pipe it would be the most relevant to analyse. In Figure 10.11 we see that in general the region around the interaction point is the most sensible place to start. Another feature in Figure 10.11 is the two edge bins at $|z| = 2.65$ m which are the edged of the magnetic field. It was found that this effect arises when a monopole is trapped in the beam-pipe and dragged by the magnetic field outwards by studying the individual events with the event viewer. This effect is likely not found in a more realistic approach where nuclear binding and other effects are included.
10.4 Conclusion

The hope for Split-Supersymmetry seems less bright with the discovery of the Higgs boson. Figure 10.7 show that the possible evolution of searches similar to the one in this thesis must be complemented by searches requiring the LLP to stay track-like if tighter constraints are to be placed on SSUSY. The balance between the Higgs limit on $m_S$, the overall sensitivity of ATLAS to LLPs and the realistic maximum amount of statistics generated over the lifetime of the experiment allows for only a narrow exclusion plane. At the time of writing the beam pipe in ATLAS is being replaced. The part of the old beam pipe that was situated around the interaction point seems to be an excellent place to begin a serious search programme for trapped magnetic monopoles at the LHC.

A famous dane once said that ‘it is hard to predict, especially the future’ it is no different when it comes to the future of particle physics. With the possibility of future precision colliders such as the International Linear Collider
(ILC) or TLEP with its 80 km circumference perhaps the future searches will be done indirectly by measuring deviations from the Standard Model rather than searching directly for new particles. The closure of the Standard Model prediction now makes the most economical strategy simply to disprove it by falsifying its predictions.
Low mass dark matter detection with IceCube
Neutrinos interact solely through the weak and gravitational forces making them invisible to direct observation at the LHC due to the small associated scattering cross section. To study them in detail, dedicated neutrino experiments rely on either large volumes to increase the interaction probability or high intensity neutrino beams and dense stacks of detectors. Neutrinos are commonly involved in Standard Model processes and are therefore produced naturally in radioactive decay, atmospheric cosmic ray interactions and nuclear processes in the Sun, as well as more exotic astrophysical sources. The IceCube observatory at the South Pole is designed to study high-energy neutrinos of celestial origins with energies spanning 50 GeV to multiple PeVs [118]. Dark matter can be indirectly detected by IceCube by searching for neutrinos produced as secondary particles in dark matter self-annihilation processes. Weakly Interacting Massive Particles (WIMPs) are from an experimental point of view an interesting dark matter candidate (Sec. 3.5) as it is inert enough to serve as dark matter but still processes a detectable particle signature in the form of weak interactions. Supersymmetry (Sec. 3.2) provides WIMPs in the form of neutralinos ($\chi$) enabling us to form predictions based on its phenomenology.

WIMPs could be captured by a massive object (stars, planets) after having scattered of nuclei leading them to accumulate in the gravitational potential within the object. The accumulation increases the rate of self-annihilation where the byproducts would be Standard Model particle pairs such as $\tau^+ \tau^-$. 

![Figure 11.1: Spin independent WIMP sensitivity of PINGU with 40 detector strings. The dark blue regions mark possible improvements in sensitivity due to more optimised methods Ref. [61].](image)
or $b\bar{b}$ [61]. The actual decay product and annihilation rate is model dependent. Previous IceCube searches [3] have shown sensitivity down to 20 GeV. The DAMA/LIBRA [18, 85], CDMS-II [4] and CoGeNT [2, 1] experiments all report possibility of anomalous signals in dark matter mass regions below 20 GeV. It has been proposed to upgrade IceCube with a low-energy infill that would increase the neutrino energy range down to $1 - 2$ GeV, to allow the determination of the neutrino mass hierarchy (Sec. 2.5.4). The interest in this upgrade has increased significantly with the discovery of a non-zero $\theta_{13}$ (Sec. 2.5.3) mixing angle. This upgrade called the Precision IceCube Next Generation Upgrade (PINGU) [61] will also increase the sensitivity to indirect low-mass dark matter searches within the region of the anomalous results from the above experiments illustrated by the blue lines in Figure 11.1.

The studies presented in this section are focused on the development of novel ways to reconstruct neutrino events at these low energies, motivated by future indirect dark matter searches. In Chapter 12 a technique for reconstructing the interaction vertex, direction and energy of incoming neutrinos is presented. In Chapter 13 methods for identifying neutrino flavour is explored. These studies are by no means complete and they as the general design of the PINGU detector is still in development as of writing. The rest of this chapter provides a short introduction to the detectors in IceCube-PINGU, detailed references include [61, 120, 42].
11.1 Detectors

The IceCube detector spans a cubic kilometre of ice at depths ranging from 1.45 to 2.45 km below surface level. It is located at the geographical South Pole in connection with the Amundsen-Scott South Pole Station. The detector is constructed as an array of Digital Optical Modules (DOMs) located on strings that are lowered into holes drilled in the ice (Figure 11.2). In the original IceCube geometry 78 strings are positioned in a hexagonal pattern with an inter-string distance of 125 m. Each string holds 60 DOMs that are positioned with a vertical spacing of 17 m. In total 5160 DOMs cover the 1km³ volume. The distance between each string corresponds roughly to the attenuation length of photons in ice. This limits the directional sensitivity to muons coming from CC $\nu_\mu$ interactions to energies where the range of the muon is roughly that distance. Neutrinos with energies below 100 GeV can be detected in the vicinity of the DeepCore infill which are 8 additional strings with a vertical DOM spacing of 7 m and at the centre of the IceCube array (Fig 11.2).

The detection principle is that secondary charged particles resulting from neutrino-nuclei scattering will be relativistic and emit Cherenkov photons (Sec. 4.1.6) in the detector volume. The photons propagate through the clear ice and is detected by the DOMs. Each DOM measures the number of photoelectrons (PE) produced as well as the precise time of arrival. These two measurements can be combined from all DOMs in the array to reconstruct the initial point of interaction as well as the direction and energy of the incoming neutrino.

11.1.1 Digital Optical Modules

Each DOM consist of a hemispherical 10-stage photo multiplier tube (PMT) 25.4 cm in diameter produced by Hamamatsu\(^1\). The single photon time resolution for these PMTs is 2 ns [121] and their spectral acceptance lies within 350 to 650 nm with a peak sensitivity $\sim 390$ nm. At the peak sensitivity the Quantum Efficiency (QE) is 25% for the regular IceCube PMTs and 35% for the PMTs used in DeepCore. The PMT is housed in a spherical pressure vessel made of glass with a transparent gel interfacing the PMT and the sphere. Inside the sphere the PMTs are pointing downwards but the geometry of the PMT gives a roughly linear acceptance in $\cos \theta$ measured from downward vertical. Onboard the DOM is three Analog to Digital Converters (ADC) with complimentary readout thresholds allowing the reconstructing of pulses with $\mu$s durations at coarse time resolution (25 ns) and shorter pulses $< 422$ ns with 3.3 ns time resolution. The signals are unfolded into Photo Electron (PE) hits offline. In addition 12 LEDs are positioned on each DOM for calibration and determination of ice properties.

\(^1\) Hamamatsu R7081-02

11.2 PINGU

The current PINGU proposal added an additional 20 or 40 strings to the centre of IceCube, each with 60 DOMs.

The DOM will slightly modified based on previous experiences the over-
all QE is expected to be comparable to the DeepCore DOMs. Due to the compact vertical spacing of the PINGU DOMs (PDOMs) a harness is proposed where the PDOMs are connected by carabiners (Figure 11.3) to inter-spacing steel wire allowing for quick deployment.

The placement of each string within IceCube is shown in Figure 11.4. Figure 11.4 is also available in Appendix A as a whole page.
12 Fast neutrino reconstruction with PINGU

Neutrino measurements with the IceCube detector relies on accurate estimation of the direction, energy, interaction point and flavor of the incoming neutrinos. To estimate these parameters, that customarily are defined as

$$\Phi = \{E_\nu, \text{azimuth}_\nu, \text{zenith}_\nu, x_{\text{vtx}}, y_{\text{vtx}}, z_{\text{vtx}}, t_{\text{vtx}}, \text{type}\}$$  (12.1)

a likelihood maximisation method is employed. The likelihood function compares the detector response from a series of track segments with the actual data. That method requires significant look-up time and is in general time consuming.

While the method described in this paper is similar, the photonic tables have been replaced by a simple parametrization of the hit time signal for a given CC neutrino interaction.

12.1 Modelling light propagation in ice

The propagation speed of a photon with wavelength $\lambda$ in ice is the phase speed of light due to traveling in a dielectric medium $c_{\text{ice}}(\lambda)$. A muon moving at a speed $\beta c_{\text{vac}} > c_{\text{ice}}$ emits Cherenkov radiation (see Sec. 4.1.6).

In Figure 12.1 a neutrino-nucleus interaction $\vec{v}$ has taken place at $\vec{x} = \{t_0, x_0, y_0, z_0\}$ and a muon with energy $E$ is emitted in a direction $\hat{\mu}$. A DOM is situated at $\vec{d} = \{d_x, d_y, d_z\}$ receives a signal at time $t$ from photons emitted by the initial interaction at $\vec{v}$ or somewhere along the muon trajectory. Depending on whether the signal was caused by a muon or the initial interaction the time would vary as the propagation length and time is different for the two scenarios

$$t_{\text{direct}} = t_0 + \frac{||\vec{v} - \vec{d}||}{c_{\text{ice}}}, \quad t_{\text{muon}} = t_0 + \frac{||\vec{v} - \vec{\epsilon}||}{B_{\text{mu}} c_{\text{vac}}} + \frac{||\vec{\epsilon} - \vec{d}||}{c_{\text{ice}}}.$$  (12.2)

In (4.31) we noted that $\cos \theta_c = (1/n(\lambda)\beta)$ which imply that for a medium with a refractive index $n(\lambda)$ a charged particle with a speed $\beta$ will emit Cherenkov light at a specific angle relative to its trajectory. The Cherenkov angle $\theta_c$ allow us to calculate the position $\vec{\epsilon}$ along the muon trajectory where, if the muon caused the signal, it should have been emitted. First we note that the point $\vec{p}$ where the DOM position is perpendicular to the muon trajectory is

$$\vec{p} = \vec{v} + \hat{\mu} \left[ (\vec{d} - \vec{v}) \cdot \hat{\mu} \right].$$  (12.3)
From Figure 12.1 we see that $\vec{p}$ together with $\vec{d}$ and the emission point $\vec{c}$ forms a right-angled triangle. Based on plane geometry we calculate the position of $\vec{c}$ with the knowledge of $\theta_c$:

$$\vec{c} = \vec{p} - \hat{\mu} \frac{||\vec{p} - \vec{d}||}{\tan \theta_c}. \tag{12.4}$$

Determining $\vec{c}$ enables us to further require the point to lie within a distance spanned by the point of the vertex and a maximum distance the muon can travel before its energy falls below the Cherenkov emission threshold (4.32). Defining these to points as $\vec{ip}$ and $\vec{ep}$ for interaction point and end point respectively, $\vec{c}$ must conform to

$$||\vec{c} - \vec{ep}|| < ||\vec{ip} - \vec{ep}|| \text{ and } ||\vec{c} - \vec{ip}|| < ||\vec{ip} - \vec{ep}|| \tag{12.5}$$

for it to lie ‘on-track’. Having calculated these properties we can produce a log-likelihood estimate on a set of event parameters $\Phi$ by the following algorithm.

1: function $\text{COMPUTELOGLIKELIHOOD}(E_p, \hat{\mu}, \vec{v}, \vec{v}_i)$
2: $llh \leftarrow 0$
3: for each dom hit $d[i], d[i]_e$ do
4: $\vec{p} \leftarrow \vec{v} + \hat{\mu} \left( \vec{d}[i] - \vec{v} \right) \cdot \hat{\mu}$
5: $\vec{c} \leftarrow \vec{p} - \mu \vec{p} \cdot \vec{v} \cdot \tan \theta_c$
6: $\vec{ip} \leftarrow \vec{v}$
7: $\vec{ep} \leftarrow \text{MaxRange}(E_p)$
8: if $||\vec{c} - \vec{ep}|| < ||\vec{ip} - \vec{ep}|| \text{ and } ||\vec{c} - \vec{ip}|| < ||\vec{ip} - \vec{ep}||$ then
9: $t \leftarrow t_0 + \frac{||\vec{c} - \vec{ip}||}{\vec{v}_i \cdot \vec{v}}$
10: else
11: $t \leftarrow t_0 + \frac{||\vec{c} - \vec{ip}||}{\vec{v}_i \cdot \vec{v}}$
12: end if
13: $llh \leftarrow llh + \logGauss(t - d[i], \sigma[i])$
14: end for
15: return $llh$
16: end function

The log-likelihood depends on the measurement uncertainty $\sigma[i]$ which in this ideal form is the only tolerance parameter.

The validity of this model can be inspected by plotting the estimate time of arrival at DOMs with the actual measured arrival time. In Figure 12.3 this comparison is made for two cases, one where the model assumes all signals originally emanated from the interaction vertex and another where the additional assumption that light that could have been emitted by a traversing muon is treated as such. The plots show that in general either of the models give a consistent response but also an upward and a downward dispersion from the expected 1:1 correlation. Any hits along the $x$-axis suggest that the model estimate is slower than the actual arrival time, while hits along the $y$-axis suggests that the model assumes to early an arrival time. The main difference between the two histograms is indeed that the model with the muon emission assumption correct the estimates that were too slow compared to the actual times, which can be taken a validation of the model.

The large dispersive region above the diagonal is a product of scattering in ice. This effect is stochastic and cumulative meaning that any deterministic model such as this one will be unable to correct it. Looking at the resolution
(a) Time of arrival correlation assuming a signal came directly from the interaction point $t_0 + |\vec{v} - \vec{d}| / c$.

(b) Time of arrival estimate assuming $t_{\muon} = t_0 + |\vec{v} - \vec{e}| / c_{\muon} + |\vec{e} - \vec{d}| / c_{\ice}$ is the model.

In Figure 12.4 it can be seen that the scattering indeed contributes significantly to the overall difference between the model and the actual time.

The scattering length in the ice where PINGU is situated is roughly 30 meters (Depth less than $-200$ m in Figure 12.5). At each scatter the photon is deflected 20 degrees on average [119]. To reduce contributions from scattering all hits assumed to come from the primary interaction that has traveled more than 30 meters are discarded. The photons emitted from the muon track are kept. The small peak on the right side of central value in Figure 12.4 is caused by after pulses in the PMTs and is removed by rejecting hits with an associated charge less than 0.65 PE. In Figure 12.6 the result of these cuts are shown.

The reduction in correctly estimated hits is quite dramatic. The peak moves from $180 \times 10^3$ to $150 \times 10^3$ further study may show if it is necessary to apply such hard cuts or if robustness can be won in the later likelihood estimation.
In Maximum Likelihood Estimation (MLE) the goal is to produce the best estimate for a set of model parameters given data. This is done by calculating the likelihood that a parameter estimate leads to the observed data given the model. Multiple observations are multiplied to form a combined likelihood. As the individual probabilities typically are rather small numbers such multiplications can become numerically unstable when calculated at finite precision. It is therefore more practical to calculate the log-likelihood where the product of the contributions are added together

$$L(\Phi) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log (f(t_i|\Phi))$$  \hspace{1cm} (12.6)$$

If we assume that an estimated arrival time $t_i$ is normal distributed around the observed arrival time $d_{ti}$ with an uncertainty $\sigma$ then the likelihood function is

$$f(d_{t1},d_{t2},...,d_{tn}|t_1,t_2,...,t_n,\sigma) = \prod_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{\sigma \sqrt{2\pi}} \exp \left(-\frac{(t_i - d_{ti})^2}{2\sigma^2}\right)$$  \hspace{1cm} (12.7)$$

The logarithm of (12.7) is

$$L = -n \log \sigma - \frac{n}{2} \log 2\pi - \frac{1}{2\sigma^2} \sum_{i=1}^{n} (t_i - d_{ti})^2.$$  \hspace{1cm} (12.8)$$

The best estimate of the parameters $\Phi$ is then

$$\arg \max_{\theta \in \Theta} L(\Phi|t_1,\ldots,t_n)$$  \hspace{1cm} (12.9)$$

Where $\Theta$ is the full physical parameter space in which $\Phi$ can be found. The problem of maximising (12.9) requires a numerical sampling method that efficiently scans the eight-dimensional parameter space. Traditional methods such as iteration is impractical due to the curse of dimensionality [22] as the number of points in the parameter space grows geometrically with each added dimension. Markov Chain Monte Carlo methods such as the Metropolis–Hastings algorithm that performs a random walk in the parameter space.
have been shown to perform acceptable with this number of dimensions. Recent developments in Bayesian inference techniques has led to what is known as Nested Sampling [94] which efficiently handles complicated likelihood spaces with multiple modalities. For this study an implementation called MULTINEST [48] is used. Figure 12.7 show how a projection in the parameter space might look like.

The green dot is the true parameter value and the yellow dot is the maximum likelihood in the plane. The grey dots are DOMS and the red dots are DOMs with associated hits that contributes to the likelihood estimates. The overall (gaussian) contour is contributions from isotropic photons assumed to come from the primary interaction. The parabolic lines are regions of likelihood space where the muon hypothesis exclude the probability of a vertex position. The lines coming out of the dots are the direction of the muon. For the estimated direction a similar plot is produced with the angle in Azimuth-Zentih co-ordinates. For this particular event with a neutrino energy of $E_{\nu} = 1.8$ GeV the projections show good agreement with the true value. It is not possible to plot the full likelihood space in any detail but

Figure 12.7: A likelihood space for a charge current $\nu_{\mu}$ event with $E_{\nu} = 1.8$ GeV arriving in PINGU with a zenith angle of 1.6. The parameters not plotted are kept at their true values which means that the effective likelihood space will look different to the 8D fitter.
the result provides some indication that low-energy neutrino reconstruction is possible with the proposed PINGU geometry.

12.2 Preliminary results

The method outlined in this chapter is still quite immature and the results shown here should be taken with a pinch of salt.

In Figures 12.8 the variation from the true values are shown for reconstructions of $x, y, z, \text{Azimuth}, \text{Zenith}$. All plots show convergence around the true value, but it is too early to conclude anything regarding resolution.
12.3 Outlook and conclusion

The likelihood based reconstruction method presented here in a semi-conceptual form is still in its infancy. The average reconstruction time is around 25 seconds but is highly dependent on the required precision and factors affecting the modality of the likelihood space. It has not been possible to finalise the project within the timeframe of my contract (as it was undertaking a few months before the end) but the implementation is freely available for anyone who would like to continue the work \(^2\).

\(^2\)http://git.mdj.dk/mdj/icedam
Particle identification of low energy neutrinos with PINGU

The event reconstruction outlined in the previous chapter assumes a track component to the event. If that is not the case the energy of the neutrino is miss calculated. Since only charge current muon neutrinos produces an extended track at low energies \(E < 50 \text{ GeV}\) a way is needed to separate these neutrinos from other flavours and interactions. IceCube and PINGU are in principle huge calorimeters when the entire energy of a neutrino is absorbed within the volume. If an event is caused by a charge current electron neutrino, the resulting electron will quickly lose its energy due to bremsstrahlung (Sec. 4.1.3) creating an electromagnetic cascade within a few meters [118] of the primary interaction. Tracking the direction of incoming neutrinos requires the event signature to be elongated to such a degree that a dipole can be seen. This is most easily done when a muon produces hits over a range comparable with the detector spacing. If the muon escapes the volume or the primary interaction falls outside the detector volume the energy measurement is biased. Signatures involving neutral current interactions are harder to identify due to a new escaping neutrino. For all practical purposes we therefore separate all events into two categories: Cascade-like and Track-like. In the search for WIMP dark matter this is of little importance, but resolving the neutrino mass hierarchy (Sec. 2.5.4) requires knowledge of how many of the observed neutrinos are muon neutrinos. In Figure 12.3a we can find a first hint as to how it would be possible to separate Cascade-like from Track-like events. If any hits requires the assumption of a track to satisfy the arrival time it is a sign of a CC \(\nu_\mu\) event. The first technique explored in this chapter is based on this idea.

13.1 Superluminal hits

Assuming it is possible to find a well defined primary interaction point \(\vec{v}\) with a precise time estimate \(\vec{v}_t\) then any DOM hits \(\vec{d}_i\) with time measurements \(d_i\) that satisfy
\[
N_{\text{super}} = \sum_{i=N_{\text{ch}}} (\sigma_i > (d_i - \vec{v}_t)) \cdot \frac{\vec{d}_i - \vec{v}}{c_{\text{ice}}} \tag{13.1}
\]
within uncertainties \(\sigma_i\) due to the intrinsic time resolution of the PMTs and scattering must have been emitted from a muon at a point closer to the DOM position than the vertex position. This method becomes gradually better at higher energies as the increased range of the muon allows for a larger devi-
Figure 13.1: The ratio between the number of hits that satisfies (13.1) and those that don’t within PINGU assuming knowledge of the true position and time of the vertex.

Figure 13.1 show how the increased range of the muon in higher-$E_\nu$ events leads to a larger separation between the cascade and track samples. An advantage with this method is that it can be calculated as part of the algorithm in Figure 12.2 at no additional cost.

### 13.2 Global Event Shapes

In (lepton) collider physics the overall event-shape contains meaningful information about the underlying event. A variable called ‘Thrust’ was invented in 1978 and used at PETRA to recognise $n$-jet events. The idea behind thrust is to find a direction $\hat{n}$ that maximises the longitudinal momentum components

$$T = \max_{\hat{n}} \left( \frac{\sum_{i} (\vec{p}_i \cdot \hat{n})}{\sum_{i} |\vec{p}_i|} \right).$$

(13.2)

If $T = 1$ all particles are produced along the direction $\hat{n}$. If $T = 0.5$ the particle momenta forms a perfectly isotropic sphere with equal contributions in all directions. For particle identification the idea is that the measure of an event-shape that can be either elongated or spherical fits perfectly with the two PID categories defined above. Since IceCube and PINGU don’t have a concept of momentum it must be replaced by another metric. In the course of this study it has been tried to replace the momentum with the following metrics

- Summed charge: $m = \sum q_i$
- Spatial distance: $m = ||\vec{d} - \vec{v}||$
The metrics \( m \) modifies (13.2) by replacing \( \vec{p}_i \)

\[
\vec{p}_i \leftarrow m \frac{\vec{d} - \vec{v}}{||\vec{d} - \vec{v}||}.
\]

The direction \( \hat{n} \) is then found by maximising \( T \) with the MINUIT minimiser

built into CERN’s ROOT framework.

The principle is illustrated in Figure 13.2. The 11 blue DOMs in the figure are hit by photons. A muon is generated at the root of the red arrow and propagates in the direction of the arrow. For each DOM the dot product between the direction \( \hat{n} \) and the scaled distance \( \vec{p}_i \) is calculated. For the topmost DOM the thick blue line represent the magnitude of the dot product. The sum of these products are the thrust \( T \). If \( \hat{n} \) is pointing in any other direction than along the trajectory the sum will become smaller. In figure 13.3 some preliminary results from the study are shown.
13.3 Conclusion

These early studies are still closer to the conceptual development stage than to full implementation. The first method is currently being pursued at Pennsylvania State University and the second at the Niels Bohr Institute. Early prototype code is found here: http://git.mdj.dk/mdj/icedam/blob/master/IceConeReco/private/FrozenLEPVariables.cxx.
A search for hadronising long-lived massive particles at the Large Hadron Collider was conducted with the ATLAS detector. No excess events were found. Based on statistical analysis, upper limits on the production cross section were observed to be between 0.01 pb and 0.006 pb for colour octet particles with masses ranging from $300 \text{ GeV/c}^2$ to $1400 \text{ GeV/c}^2$, and 0.01 pb to 0.004 pb for colour triplet particles. In the context of Supersymmetry with decoupled sfermion and sboson sectors (Split-SUSY) this gives a lower limit on the gluino mass of $989 \text{ GeV/c}^2$, and $683 \text{ GeV/c}^2$ for the stop mass.

A new method was presented in Chapter 8 that improves the speed ($\beta$) estimation for long-lived particles in the ATLAS Tile calorimeter with a factor of 7 improvement in resolution at low-$\beta$ and a factor of 2 at high-$\beta$. An additional advantage of the new method is that the $\beta$-response is flat within the range of acceptance ($0.2 < \beta \leq 0.9$) with an average $\beta$-resolution of 2.2%.

In Chapter 7, the resolution of the speed estimate using the ATLAS pixel tracker has been improved by a factor of 3 at low $\beta$ to a factor of 2 at higher $\beta$. The new method also introduces a flat response compared with previous methods.

In Chapter 10.3, a simulation of magnetically charged monopoles was presented. Based on the simulation, magnetic monopoles with Dirac charges $g_D > 10$ will predominantly be trapped in the LHC beam-pipe if produced within ATLAS, two regions were identified as optimal for the extraction of the beam-pipe in a magnetometer-based search, one at the interaction point in the middle of the detector and the other at the end of the magnetic field where monopoles that are accelerated in the magnetic field while close to the beam-pipe will be brought to rest due to electromagnetic energy loss.

The proposed low-energy extension to the IceCube neutrino detector called PINGU will improve the neutrino sensitivity to $E_\nu \sim 1 \text{ GeV}$. Motivated by indirect search for Dark Matter annihilation in the sun, a likelihood based reconstruction method was developed in Chapter 12 that allows neutrino interaction vertex, energy, and direction estimation at this lower energy. The method provides a fast estimate based on a newly developed parametric model and multi-dimensional nested sampling. In addition, two neutrino flavour detection algorithms where developed in Chapter 13 which allow separation of charge-current muon events from other neutrino events.
VI Appendices
Schematics
Figure A.1: ATLAS Inner detector $r - \phi$ view
Figure A.2: ATLAS Muon spectrometer cross sectional view
Figure A.3: The proposed 40 string PINGU geometry Ref. [61].
References


[119] The IceCube Collaboration. Optical properties in deep glacial ice at the South Pole.


[137] S Zimmermann. A search for stable massive particles carrying electric charges in the range of 2e to 6e in proton-proton collisions at $s = 7$ TeV recorded with the ATLAS detector at the LHC.